This item was submitted to Loughborough University as a PhD thesis by the author and is made available in the Institutional Repository
(https://dspace.lboro.ac.uk/) under the following Creative Commons Licence conditions.

## (c) creative <br> C O M M O N S D E E D

Attribution-NonCommercial-NoDerivs 2.5

You are free:

- to copy, distribute, display, and perform the work

Under the following conditions:

BY:
Attribution. You must attribute the work in the manner specified by the author or licensor.


Noncommercial. You may not use this work for commercial purposes.

No Derivative Works. You may not alter, transform, or build upon this work.

- For any reuse or distribution, you must make clear to others the license terms of this work.
- Any of these conditions can be waived if you get permission from the copyright holder.

Your fair use and other rights are in no way affected by the above.

This is a human-readable summary of the Leqal Code (the full license).
Disclaimer

For the full text of this licence, please go to: http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/2.5/

# Statistical Inference and Efficient Portfolio Investment Performance 

By<br>Shibo Liu

A Doctoral Thesis<br>Submitted in Partial Fulfilment of the Requirements for the Award of<br>Doctor of Philosophy<br>School of Business and Economics<br>Loughborough University

September 2013
©Shibo Liu, 2013

## Acknowledgements

I would like to thank my PhD supervisors, Professor Tom Weyman-Jones and Dr Karligash Glass, for supporting me during these past four years. I am very grateful to Professor Tom Weyman-Jones for his knowledge and many insightful discussions and suggestions. And I would particularly like to thank Dr Karligash Glass for her learning materials and advice on Matlab codes. On a more personal level, I would like to thank my husband Dazhang Li for always giving me spiritual support during my studies.

## Abstract

Two main methods have been used in mutual funds evaluation. One is portfolio evaluation, and the other is data envelopment analysis (DEA). The history of portfolio evaluation dates from the 1960s with emphasis on both expected return and risk. However, there are many criticisms of traditional portfolio analysis which focus on their sensitivity to chosen benchmarks. Imperfections in portfolio analysis models have led to the exploration of other methodologies to evaluate fund performance, in particular data envelopment analysis (DEA). DEA is a non-parametric methodology for measuring relative performance based on mathematical programming.

Based on the unique characteristics of investment trusts, Morey and Morey (1999) developed a mutual funds efficiency measure in a traditional mean-variance model. It was based on Markowitz portfolio theory and related the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in mean-variance space. The first application in this thesis is to apply the non-linear programming calculation of the efficient frontier in mean variance space outlined in Morey and Morey (1999) to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds. One limitation of DEA is the absence of sampling error from the methodology. Therefore the second innovation in this thesis extends Morey and Morey (1999) model by the application of bootstrapped probability density functions in order to develop confidence intervals for the relative performance indicators. This has not previously been achieved for the DEA frontier in mean variance space so that the DEA efficiency scores obtained through Morey and Morey (1999) model have not hitherto been tested for statistical significance. The third application in this thesis is to examine the efficiency of investment trusts in order to analyze the factors contributing to investment trusts' performance and detect the determinants of inefficiency. Robust-OLS regression, Tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge (PW) models are conducted and compared to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment funds.

From the thesis, new and original Matlab codes designed for Morey and Morey (1999) models are presented. With the Matlab codes, not only the results are obtained, but also how this quadratic model is programming could be very clearly seen, with all the details revealed.

## Content

Abstract ..... ii
List of Tables ..... v
List of Figures ..... vi
List of Abbreviations ..... vii
Chapter 1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Introduction and motivation ..... 1
1.2 Contributions to knowledge ..... 4
1.3 Structure of this thesis ..... 4
Chapter 2 Literature Review ..... 6
2.1 Portfolio Evaluation ..... 8
2.2 Data Envelopment Analysis ..... 25
Chapter 3 A quadratic DEA mode ..... 45
3.1 Introduction and motivation ..... 45
3.2 Literature review ..... 47
3.3 Methodology ..... 48
3.4 Data collection ..... 51
3.5 Results analysis ..... 54
3.6 Conclusion ..... 68
Chapter 4 Bootstrapping of the DEA scores ..... 70
4.1 Introduction and motivation ..... 70
4.2 Literature review and methodology ..... 71
4.3 Algorithm of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model ..... 84
4.4 Data collection ..... 86
4.5 Results analysis ..... 88
4.6 Conclusion ..... 92
Chapter 5 Evaluating contextual variables affecting investment trust performance in second stage DEA efficiency analyses ..... 93
5.1 Introduction ..... 93
5.2 Literature review and methodology ..... 95
5.3 Data collection ..... 105
5.4 Results analysis ..... 108
5.5 Conclusion ..... 109
6. Conclusion ..... 121
6.1 Introduction ..... 121
6.2 Contributions to knowledge ..... 123
Bibliography ..... 125
Appendx ..... 132
Appendix A ..... 132
Appendix B ..... 140
Appendix C ..... 145
Appendix D ..... 161

## List of Tables

Table 3.4.1 Funds analysed and their mean monthly returns ..... 53
Table 3.5.1 (a) Frontier values from the mean return augmentation programming ..... 55
Table 3.5.1(b) DEA scores from the mean return augmentation programming. ..... 56
Table 3.5.2 (a) Frontier values from the risk contraction programming ..... 57
Table 3.5.2 (b) DEA scores from the risk contraction programming ..... 58
Table 3.5.3 Comparison of frontier and actual levels of returns and risks for Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A fund. ..... 60
Table 3.5.4 Rankings of funds from two approaches ..... 62
Table 3.5.5 Lagrangians for the 29 funds ..... 65
Table 4.4.1 Frontier values and scores from the mean return augmentation programming. .....  87
Table 4.5.1 Bootstrap results with Bandwidth $\mathrm{h}=0.2186$ ..... 89
Table 4.5.2 Rankings before and after bias correction ..... 91
Table 5.3.1 three year mean returns for selected funds ..... 107
Table 5.3.2 time-series average of yearly data from 2008 to 2010. ..... 108
Table 5.4.1 DEA scores from Risk contraction approach ..... 109
Table 5.4.2 Summary statistics ..... 109
Table 5.4.3 Results from different models ..... 111
Table5.4.4 Correlation matrix ..... 112
Table 5.4.5Average marginal effects ..... 113
Table 5.4.6 Ranking from different models ..... 114
Table 5.4.7 Correlation among rankings from different models ..... 115
Table 5.4.8 Statistics from the recursive model ..... 116

## List of Figures

Figure 2.2.1 Input Space Representation ..... 28
Figure 2.2.2 Output Space Representation. ..... 30
Figure 2.2.3 Graph Technology Representation. ..... 31
Figure 2.2.4 Free disposal hull (FDH) input space representation ..... 35
Figure 2.2.5 FDH Production Possibilities Set. ..... 36
Figure 2.2.6 Different paths to the efficiency frontier. ..... 41
Figure 2.2.7 Efficiency Improvement Possibility Function \& Decomposition ..... 41
Figure 3.3.1 Quadratic DEA efficiency frontier ..... 49
Figure 5.4.1 Forecasting abilities from recursive model (1) ..... 117
Figure 5.4.2 Forecasting abilities from recursive model (2) ..... 118
Figure 5.4.3 Forecasting abilities from recursive model (3) ..... 118

## List of Abbreviations

CAPM - Capital Asset Pricing Model
CRS - Constant Returns to Scale
DEA - Data Envelopment Analysis
DRS - Decreasing Returns to Scale
ETF - Exchange Traded Funds
FTSE- Financial Times Stock Exchange
IRS - Increasing Returns to Scale
MLE - Maximum Likelihood Estimation
OEIC - Open Ended Investment Company
OLS - Ordinary Least Squares
RTS - Returns to Scale

## Chapter 1 Introduction

### 1.1 Introduction and motivation

UK fund market is very large; according to Morningstar, there are more than 32,000 funds available in the UK market. The evaluation of mutual funds is of considerable importance. First, it is to see how well the mutual funds industry as a whole has performed in order to define their advantages as investment vehicles. Second, the evaluation results could help investors select better performing funds. Furthermore, the evaluation process motivates mutual fund companies to generate and report superior returns because investment dollars usually flow into top performing funds in response to industry publications and data. Evaluation could also help investors to understand what caused any superior performance.

Two main methods have been used in mutual funds evaluation. One is portfolio evaluation, and the other is data envelopment analysis (DEA) The history of portfolio evaluation dates from the 1960s (Sharp, 1966; Treynor, 1965 and Jensen, 1968), with emphasis on both expected return and risk. Mutual fund managers attempt to find efficient portfolios - those promising the greatest expected return for any given degree of risk, i.e. risk-adjusted return. However, there are many criticisms of traditional portfolio analysis which focus on their sensitivity to chosen benchmarks. For the CAPM, the market portfolio is an ideal portfolio that only exists in theory. In practice certain indexes are used as approximations, but this causes problems since different indexes are likely to give different results in empirical work. For multi-index models, the difficulties lie in justifying how many and which indexes should be included in the model and defining which category a particular equity belongs to, especially for some equities with properties that suit more than one category. These imperfections in portfolio analysis models have led to the exploration of other methodologies to evaluate fund performance.

Murthi et at. (1997) were the first to apply DEA methodology to fund performance evaluation. A large proportion of DEA models applied to mutual funds show pieceswise linear correspondence between multiple inputs and outputs. However, according to Markowitz portfolio theory, there is correlation between different assets which should not be ignored, and these co-movements between different securities affect the relationship between expected return and risk of the combined portfolio.

Based on the unique characteristics of investment trusts, Morey and Morey (1999) developed a mutual funds efficiency measure in a traditional mean-variance model. It was based on Markowitz portfolio theory and related the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in mean-variance space. The model is derived from the standard data envelopment analysis but differs from it in having non-linear constraints in the envelopment version of the model's structure. Although mean and variance are considered in Morey and Morey (1999) models, they distinguish their model from traditional portfolio analysis by the fact that there is no theoretical benchmark like the market portfolio of the Capital Asset Pricing Model. Instead, the benchmarking fund in Morey and Morey (1999) consists of certain funds in the group, each with a particular weight. So rather than being compared with an idealised fund that requires information about all the equities in the market, the Morey and Morey (1999) model benchmarks the funds under evaluation against
themselves. This makes the Morey and Morey (1999) model practically feasible and easier to test. Therefore, the objective of the first chapter in this thesis is to apply the procedures in Morey and Morey (1999) to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds.

The objective of the second chapter in this thesis is to extend Morey and Morey (1999) model by adding statistical significance tests. The purpose of the Monte Carlo bootstrapping analysis in the thesis is to treat the measured scores as statistical estimators and to construct the sampling distributions of these estimators. The motivation for this is that the DEA efficiency scores obtained through Morey and Morey (1999) model have not hitherto been tested for statistical significance. Banker (1993), Kneip et al. (1996), Korostelev et al. (1995a, 1995b), Gijbels et al (1999) have investigated the consistency and convergence properties of the DEA scores and found that DEA estimators have asymptotic sampling distributions, which means that the efficiency scores only converge when the sample size is large enough. They are also very sensitive to outliers and extreme values, for example, dropping one outlier can dramatically change the efficiency level for other decision making units. Thus the DEA estimators have been shown to be biased when using a finite number of observed units, so that significant tests are necessary to correct the bias. The confidence intervals obtained through the tests can give insights about whether the DEA scores obtained from the Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic models are just random results or statistically significant. Therefore, Simar Wilson (2008) bootstrapping algorithms are utilised to develop statistical inference and confidence intervals for the indexes of efficient investment fund performance.

The purpose of the third chapter in this thesis is to examine the efficiency of investment trusts, analyze the factors contributing to investment trusts performance and detect the determinants of inefficiency. The second stage DEA efficiency analyses are used to evaluate contextual variables affecting the fund performance. For the second stage analysis, robust-OLS regression, Tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge (PW) models are then conducted and compared to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment funds. The DEA efficiency scores are regressed on potential variables including Sharpe ratio, Jensen's alpha, expense ratio, $\mathrm{P} / \mathrm{E}$ ratio, book to market ratio and market value of the investment funds to test the statistical significance of those factors.

### 1.2 Contributions to knowledge

In the first application, the Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model has been compared with traditional portfolio analysis and standard linear DEA models. Also, the Matlab codes for this model which have written especially for this thesis are reported as part of the contribution in the thesis. With the Matlab codes, one can not only obtain the results, but also see very clearly how this model is programmed, with all the details revealed. This might benefit later practitioners who are interested in the quadratic DEA models.

Another major contribution of this thesis is in its third application, because as far as I am aware, there is only one paper in the literature about the practical application of second stage DEA on investment trusts. Therefore, it is very meaningful to examine different potential factors affecting the fund performance. It is hoped that this application will draw the attention of other practitioners and promote the development of using second stage DEA models to explain the investment trusts efficiency.

### 1.3 Structure of this thesis

The thesis is organised as follows:

Chapter 2 provides a fairly inclusive literature review on portfolio analysis models and standard DEA models.

Chapter 3 illustrates Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model, and explains the advantages of this quadratic DEA model compared with traditional portfolio analysis and standard linear DEA models. Then the procedures in Morey and Morey (1999) are applied to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds.

Chapter 4 extends the Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model by utilizing SimarWilson (2008) bootstrapping algorithms to obtain statistical inference and confidence intervals for the indexes of efficient investment fund performance.

Chapter 5 constructs a second stage DEA model to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment trusts. The commonly used second stage DEA models are applied and compared. Also a recursive model is developed to compare the efficiency measures- DEA, Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha. Results and inferences are drawn from an extensive new dataset of investment funds.

Chapter 6 gives the conclusion.

## Chapter 2 Literature Review

This literature review of the mutual fund evaluation covers two parts; one is portfolio evaluation, which is so far the mainstream focus of the analysis of the fund performance. The other is called Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) of mutual funds evaluation, which has appeared in the operational research area fairly recently. The first half of this literature review is about portfolio evaluation, and DEA on funds evaluation literature review is covered in the second half.

Before the formal review of the academic mutual funds evaluation, it is necessary to make clear about the definition and characteristics of mutual funds as well as the purposes of the
evaluation. A simple definition of a mutual fund is that a mutual fund is a portfolio of investments managed on behalf of a pool of investors by a fund manager. Funds exist for investment in many kinds of securities: stocks, bonds, money market instruments and commodities or mortgage-backed securities. Once the money is collected from the investors, it Is allocated into different types of investments and managed by the professionals on a regular basis.

There are several basic types of mutual fund. The earliest form of fund is a unit trust, which is an 'open-ended' fund - the size of the fund and the number of units can expand and contract with time according to demand. To liquidate, unit holders sell units back to the managers of the unit trusts. There is a spread between offer price and bid price here, unlike OEICs. An OEIC (open ended investment company) is a company that issues shares rather than units. In the UK many unit trust managers have converted to OEICs in recent years because OEICs have a simpler pricing system without spread, which means there is only one price for both buyers and sellers. Mutual funds can also be quoted on a stock exchange, like the stocks. ETFs and investment trusts are such kinds. ETFs (exchange traded funds) are index trackers. They follow a particular index like the FTSE 100 or a particular sector. ETFs are set up as companies issuing shares and the shareholders' money is used to buy securities to form a sector-mimicking portfolio like pharmaceutical industry. They are also open-ended funds. As they are quoted companies, investors can buy and sell their shares in the secondary market like any stocks. The other type of quoted mutual funds is investment trusts. These are actually listed companies, and are therefore different from unit trust and OEICs. Unlike ETFs, they are close-ended funds; therefore the number of shares is fixed as with any other company that issues shares. An investment trust normally only invests in specific types of assets for example Chinese technology shares and is banned from switching to other segments.

Unit trusts, OEICs, ETFs and investment trusts differ in their type of organisation. However, mutual funds can also be differentiated by their size and the assets they invest in. For example, growth equity funds are funds that have most exposure to growth stocks; and a small stock fund is a fund that buys small stocks predominantly; others may be bond/income funds, money market funds etc.

Instead of buying shares directly, investors buy into a managed pool of investment funds. Through investing in a mutual fund, investors with a relatively small sum can gain access to a
diversified portfolio. Furthermore, those who know little about investment can take advantage of professional management. However, all of these advantages are neither free nor without risk. There are many types of fees associated with the mutual funds investment, sales loads, redemption fees, exchange fees, management fees etc. Note that $12 \mathrm{~b}-1$ fees relate to a US SEC rule and are not relevant in the UK. Unit trusts may charge distribution fees but investment trusts do not. Therefore, the evaluation of the mutual funds is essential, to decide which are good and which are not; or whether investors could end up paying too much for poor management.

There is more than one purpose for the evaluation of mutual funds. First, it is to see how well the mutual funds industry as a whole has performed in order to define their advantages as investment vehicles. And also, the evaluation results could help investors select better performing funds. Furthermore, the evaluation process motivates mutual fund companies to generate therefore report superior returns because investment dollars usually flow into top performing funds based on industry publications and data; evaluation could also help them understand what caused the performance and where the superior comes from.

### 2.1 Portfolio Evaluation

Portfolio evaluation has evolved dramatically over the last two decades. Crude return calculations were the original idea which was soon replaced by the modern portfolio theory based on risk-return analysis. The key element in the portfolio analysis is the emphasis on both expected return and risk. Mutual fund managers attempt to find efficient portfolios those promising the greatest expected return for any given degree of risk, i.e. risk-adjusted return. The seminal models are those of Sharpe (1966), Treynor (1965) and Jensen (1968), and Merton and Henriksson (1981) and Treynor and Mazuy (1966).

Sharpe (1966) generated a reward-to-variability ratio (R/V) derived from the Tobin model (Tobin, 1958):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{\mathrm{t}}=\frac{1}{2 \sigma_{\mathrm{j}}^{2}\left(f_{\mathrm{f}}\right)} \frac{\mathrm{dV}\left(\mathrm{R}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)}{\mathrm{dE}\left(\mathrm{R}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)}\left[\mathrm{E}\left(\mathrm{R}_{\mathrm{m}}^{\circ}\right)+f_{\mathrm{f}}^{*}\right] \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Sharpe ratio is simply $\frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)}=-\frac{\partial U}{\partial E\left(R_{j}\right)} / \frac{\partial U}{\partial V\left(R_{j}\right)}$. The numerator shows the difference between the funds' expected annual return and a risk-free interest rate or excess return; it is thus the reward provided the investor for bearing some risk. The denominator measures the standard deviation of the annual rate of return; it shows the amount of risk actually borne. The ratio is thus the reward per unit of variance. So mutual funds with lager Sharpe Ratios are assumed to have better performance than those with small ratios.

The Sharpe Ratio takes diversification into account: as the degree of diversification increases, the variance decreases therefore the ratio gets larger.

Treynor (1965) proposed the Treynor index $\beta_{\mathrm{m}}=1$, (also referred to as the reward-tovolatility ratio), which is an investment measure that, like the Sharpe ratio, evaluates the excess return to a risky investment per unit of risk. However, unlike Sharpe ratio, which takes diversification into account, risk in Treynor index is measured as non-diversifiable or systematic risk. Since the returns on all diversified portfolios move with the market, the extent to which changes in the market are reflected in changes in a fund's rate of return can stand as a good measure of the total volatility of the funds' return over time.

Treynor Index is obtained by simply substituting volatility (defined as the fund's beta) for variance in the formula for the $\mathrm{R} / \mathrm{V}$ ratio:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{\mathrm{jt}}=\gamma_{t} \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

What should be noted is that the return calculated according to the Treynor index assumes that the portfolio is suitably diversified, as it only takes systematic risk into consideration. Unsystematic risk is not accounted for and therefore the results of a Treynor Index calculation for an undiversified portfolio are misleading. It is assumed that the idiosyncratic risk of a portfolio can be removed by further diversification, so that systematic risk is the valid measure. However, whether the use of total risk (Sharpe) or systematic risk (Treynor) is better in performance evaluation depends on the purpose of the evaluation.

Sharpe ratio and Treynor index are the simplest measurements yet they have still been used by academics. Another commonly used model is Jensen (1968). Jensen (1968) derived an expost CAPM from the market model and the CAPM:

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{j t}=g_{t}=q_{j t}\left(E\left(R_{m}^{*}\right)+p_{t}^{*}\right) \tag{2.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the market model

$$
\begin{array}{r}
q_{j t}=\frac{1}{2 s_{j}^{2}\left(\beta_{t}^{\prime}\right)} \frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)} \\
 \tag{2.2.5}\\
\frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)}
\end{array}
$$

From the CAPM:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(R_{i}\right)=R_{f}+\beta_{i}\left(E\left(R_{m}\right)-R_{f}\right) \tag{2.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

If (2.2.5) and (2.2.6) hold, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i t}=R_{f}+\beta_{i}\left(E\left(R_{m}\right)-R_{f}\right)+\beta_{i}\left(R_{m t}-E\left(R_{m}\right)\right)+\varepsilon_{i t} \tag{2.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Rearranging (2.2.7) we get:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j t}-R_{f}=a+b R M O(t)+s S M B(t)+h H M L(t) \tag{2.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Add factor $\alpha_{i}$ to equation (2.2.8), it becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{i t}-R_{f}=\alpha_{i}+\beta_{i}\left(R_{m t}-R_{f t}\right)+\varepsilon_{i t} \tag{2.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

When $\beta$, (2.2.9) could be seen as it is derived from (2.2.8). $R_{j t}$ can be positive or negative. Equation (2.2.8) holds when there is no managing of assets involved. However, if the fund manager has superior ability to find underpriced securities (perhaps because of special knowledge not available to others), there would be an excess return compared with the return
without asset management. The excess return would then be captured by $\alpha_{i}$ in (2.2.9). And during this circumstance, there would be an $\alpha_{i}>0$ in (2.2.9). Therefore $\alpha_{i}$ is called Jensen's alpha, which represents the average incremental rate of return on the portfolio per unit time which is due solely to the manager's stock-selection abilities.

The above three methods are common measures of the fund manager's overall performance. From Fama (1972) the fund manager's ability can also be decomposed into detailed factors that affect the overall performance: micro forecasting (forecast of price movements of individual stocks relative to stocks generally) and macro forecasting (forecast of price movements of the general stock market relative to fixed income securities). Micro forecast is frequently called 'security analysis' and macro forecasting is referred to as 'market timing'. Put another way, market timing ability is the fund's manager's talent to forecast whether the stock market as a whole will beat the bond market or vice versa. Selection ability is the ability of the manager to increase returns on the portfolio through successful prediction of future security prices given the level of the risk of his portfolio. The ability to time the ups and downs of the stock market has the potential to generate extraordinary returns as the same as selection ability, therefore testing the fund manager's market timing ability has been an important issue.

Merton and Henriksson (1981) and Henriksson (1984) describe a model that identifies market-timing ability separately from Jensen's $\alpha$. In Henriksson and Merton model (HM), the market timer's forecasts take a simple form that the investment fund manager forecasts either that stocks will earn a higher return than bonds or that bonds will earn a higher return than stocks. Define $Z_{p}(t)$ as the realized return on the investment fund portfolio, $Z_{m}(t)$ as the return on the market portfolio, $x(t) \equiv Z_{M}(t)-R(t)$ is the realized excess return on the market, and let $y(t) \equiv \max \left[0, R(t)-Z_{m}(t)\right]=\max [0,-x(t)]$.

It assumes that the fund has two target risk levels: $\eta_{1}(t)$ for the forecast of a 'down market' $\left(Z_{m}(t) \leq R(t)\right)$ and $\eta_{2}(t)$ for the forecast of an 'up market' $\left(Z_{m}(t)>R(t)\right)$

Let $\theta(t)$ be a random variable such that $\theta(t)=1$ if the forecast is correct and $\theta(t)=0$ is the forecast is incorrect. The probability function for $\theta(t)$ conditional on the market return $Z_{m}(t)=Z$ is written as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Pr} o b\left\{\theta(t)=1 \mid Z_{m}(t)=Z\right\} & =p_{1}(t) \text { for } 0 \leq Z_{m}(t) \leq R(t)  \tag{2.2.10a}\\
& =p_{2}(t) \text { for } R(t)<Z_{m}(t)<\infty \tag{2.2.10b}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $p_{1}(t)$ is the probability of correct forecast of a down market and $p_{2}(t)$ is the probability of correct forecast of an up market.

Now let $\gamma(t)=0$ if a 'down market' is forecasted at time t therefore $\left(0 \leq Z_{m}(t) \leq R(t)\right)$ and $\gamma(t)=1$ if an 'up market' is forecasted, in which case $R(t)<Z_{m}(t)<\infty$.

Then according to (2.2.11a) and (2.2.11b),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Pr} o b\left\{\gamma(t)=0 \mid Z_{m}(t) \leq R(t)\right\}=p_{1}(t)  \tag{2.2.11a}\\
& \operatorname{Pr} o b\left\{\gamma(t)=1 \mid Z_{m}(t) \leq R(t)\right\}=1-p_{1}(t)  \tag{2.2.11b}\\
& \operatorname{Pr} o b\left\{\gamma(t)=1 \mid Z_{m}(t)>R(t)\right\}=p_{2}(t)  \tag{2.2.11c}\\
& \operatorname{Pr} o b\left\{\gamma(t)=0 \mid Z_{m}(t)>R(t)\right\}=1-p_{2}(t) \tag{2.2.11d}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $p_{1}(t)$ is the probability of a correct forecast of a down market and $1-p_{1}(t)$ is the probability of an incorrect forecast of an up market; $p_{2}(t)$ is the probability of a correct forecast of an up market and $1-p_{2}(t)$ is the probability of an incorrect forecast of a down market. Merton (1981) showed that a necessary condition for a rational forecast to have a positive value is that the conditional probabilities satisfy $p_{1}+p_{2}(t)>1$

Henrikson and Merton market timing model is illustrated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{p}(t)-R(t)=\alpha_{p}+\beta_{1} x(t)+\beta_{2} y(t)+\varepsilon(t) \tag{2.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Henriksson and Merton (1981) showed that, ignoring the management fee for the fund, the large sample least squares estimates of $\beta_{1}$ and $\beta_{2}$ in Equation (2.2.12) can be written as:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Plim} \hat{\beta}_{1}=p_{2} \eta_{2}+\left(1-p_{2}\right) \eta_{1}  \tag{2.2.13a}\\
& \operatorname{Plim} \hat{\beta}_{2}=\left(p_{1}+p_{2}-1\right)\left(\eta_{2}-\eta_{1}\right) \tag{2.2.13b}
\end{align*}
$$

The market-timing ability of the forecaster is measured by $\beta_{2}$ and security analysis is identified by $\alpha_{p} . \alpha_{p}$ and $\beta_{2} y(t)$ together correspond to $\alpha_{i}$ in Jensen's model. Therefore, this model is used to estimate the separate contributions of selectivity and market timing. Merton and Henriksson (1981) claimed that the pattern of returns from successful market timing is similar to that from following certain option strategies. And they derive an equilibrium theory of value for market-timing forecasting skills based on this idea.

In an up market, $y(t)=0$ so that $\hat{\beta}_{1}$ becomes the only risk factor and is the systematic risk given by $\beta_{i}$ in Jenson's equation. However, when a down market happens, $y(t)=R(t)-Z_{m}(t)>0$, the return of the portfolio will be protected by $\beta_{2} \mathrm{y}(\mathrm{t})$, given the fund manager's forecasting ability.

Merton (1981) constructed a put options investment portfolio whose return was compared with those of the funds run by the market timer. His strategy was as follows:

For each dollar invested in the portfolio, allocate the fractions $\omega_{1}(t) \equiv p_{2} \eta_{2}+\left(1-p_{2}\right) \eta_{1}$ to the market, $\quad \omega_{2}(t)=\left(p_{1}+p_{2}-1\right)\left(\eta_{2}-\eta_{1}\right)$ to put options on the market, and $\omega_{3}(t) \equiv 1-\omega_{1}(t)-\omega_{2}(t)$ to riskless bonds. The return per dollar on this portfolio, $Z_{s}(t)$ can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{s}(t)=\omega_{1}(t) Z_{m}(t)+\omega_{2}(t) \max \left[0, R(t)-Z_{m}(t)\right]+\omega_{3}(t) R(t) \tag{2.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Merton (1981) showed that in equilibrium $Z_{p}(t)$ in (2.2.12) equals $Z_{s}(t)$ in (2.2.14). We can see that $\operatorname{plim} \hat{\beta}_{1}=\omega_{1}(t), \operatorname{plim} \hat{\beta}_{2}=\omega_{2}(t)$ and $y(t)$ in (2.2.12) represents the return on one such option in (2.2.14). Therefore, from the comparison, the value of the market timing is reflected in the fact that the put options are obtained for free, under the assumption that the
management fee is ignored. Market timing therefore gives investors exactly the same protection as a put option with an exercise price of $R(t)$.

With the management fees in consideration, let $A(t)$ denote the total value of investment in securities by the fund at time $t$ and $F(t)$ the total fees paid at the beginning of period t for managing the fund between t and $t+1$, then the total (gross) dollar amount invested in the fund at time $t, I(t)$, satisfies $I(t)=A(t)+F(t)$ and the management fee denoted as a fraction of assets held by the fund is given by $m(t) \equiv \frac{F(t)}{A(t)}$. Let $g(t)$ denote the market price of a one-period put option on one share with an exercise price of $R(t)$. Merton (1981) showed that, in equilibrium, $m(t)=\left(p_{1}+p_{2}-1\right)\left(\eta_{2}-\eta_{1}\right) g(t)$, which means that the management fee should be equal to the cost of purchasing the number of $\left(p_{1}+p_{2}-1\right)\left(\eta_{2}-\eta_{1}\right)$ put options, otherwise there would be an arbitrage between the market timing fund and this specific portfolio including such a put option.

Another popular market timing model was proposed by Treynor and Mazuy (1966) which suggests that timing ability could be evaluated by including a quadratic term in a simple 'characteristic line' (market model) estimation. Based on this idea Jensen (1972) proposed a formal quadratic model regressing $R_{j t}$ on $\tilde{\pi}_{t}$ and $\tilde{\pi}_{t}{ }^{2}$, but Pfleiderer and Bhattacharya (1983) pointed out that $\tilde{\pi}_{t}=\tilde{R}_{m t}-E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)$, and that a good estimate of $E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)$ is very hard to obtain. They therefore used $R_{m t}$ in the place of $\tilde{\pi}_{t}$. The final model is now generally written as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{R}_{j t}=\eta_{0}^{\prime}+\eta_{1}^{\prime} \widetilde{R}_{m t}+\eta_{2}^{\prime} R_{m t}^{2}+\widetilde{\omega}_{t}^{\prime} \tag{2.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Pleiderer and Bhattacharya (1983) proved that the probability limits of the coefficients obtained from traditional least square regression are

$$
\begin{gather*}
P \lim \hat{\eta}_{0}^{\prime}=\alpha^{p}  \tag{2.2.16a}\\
P \lim \hat{\eta}_{1}^{\prime}=\theta E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)(1-\varphi) \tag{2.2.16b}
\end{gather*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
P \lim \hat{\eta}_{2}^{\prime}=\rho^{2} \theta \tag{2.2.16c}
\end{equation*}
$$

The market-timing coefficient is $\eta_{2}^{\prime}$. The definition of $\rho^{2}$ and $\theta$ start from Jensen (1972), who defines $\tilde{\pi}_{t}$ as an unobservable 'market factor' which to some extent affects the returns on all securities, and assumes $E\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t}\right)=0$. Then the excess returns on the market index can be expressed as: $\tilde{R}_{m t} \cong E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)+\tilde{\pi}_{t}$

Define $\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}$ as the portfolio manager's forecast of the market factor $\tilde{\pi}_{t}$ and assume $\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}=E\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t} \mid \Phi_{j, t-1}\right)$ where $\Phi_{j, t-1}$ is the information set available to the manager at time t-1. Given $\tilde{\pi}_{t}$ and $\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}$, define $\rho$ as the correlation between the manager's forecast and the actual market returns. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho=\frac{\operatorname{cov}\left(\tilde{\pi}^{*}, \tilde{\pi}\right)}{\sigma_{\tilde{\pi}^{*}}, \sigma_{\tilde{\pi}}} \tag{2.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

So that the better the manager is informed, the closer $\rho^{2}$ is to unity.

Let $\gamma_{t}$ be the fraction invested in the market portfolio at time $t$, and $1-\gamma_{t}$ the fraction invested in the riskless asset. Thus the expected excess return and variance of return on the portfolio are:

$$
\begin{gather*}
E\left(\tilde{R}_{j t}\right)=\gamma_{t}\left[E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)+\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}\right]  \tag{2.2.18}\\
V\left(\tilde{R}_{j t}\right)=\gamma_{t}^{2} \sigma_{t}^{2}\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t}\right) \tag{2.2.19}
\end{gather*}
$$

The manager's problem is to

$$
\max _{\gamma_{T}} U\left[E\left(\widetilde{R}_{j t}\right), V\left(\tilde{R}_{j t}\right)\right]=\max _{\gamma_{T}} U\left[\gamma_{t} E\left(\widetilde{R}_{m}+\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}\right), \gamma_{t}^{2} \sigma_{t}^{2}\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}\right)\right]
$$

and the solution to this yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{t}=\frac{1}{2 \sigma_{j}^{2}\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t}\right)} \frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)}\left[E\left(\tilde{R}_{m}\right)+\tilde{\pi}_{t}^{*}\right] \tag{2.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)}=-\frac{\partial U}{\partial E\left(R_{j}\right)} / \frac{\partial U}{\partial V\left(R_{j}\right)} \tag{2.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

(the slope of the indifference curve between variance and excess return) is a coefficient of risk aversion.

Since $\beta_{m}=1$ and $\beta_{j t}=\gamma_{t}$ thus the manager's target risk can be given by $\beta_{j t}=\gamma_{t}=\theta_{j t}\left(E\left(\widetilde{R}_{m}\right)+\pi_{t}^{*}\right)$

Where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{j t}=\frac{1}{2 \sigma_{j}^{2}\left(\tilde{\pi}_{t}\right)} \frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)} \tag{2.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

The more aggressive the fund manager is (even when he only has access to low quality information), the larger are both $\frac{d V\left(R_{j}\right)}{d E\left(R_{j}\right)}$ and $\theta_{j t}$.

Therefore, we conclude that from Jensen(1972) and Pfleiderer and Bhattacharya (1983), the market timing returns of the mutual funds managers are decided by how well informed or how aggressive they are.

However, superior forecasting ability has not generally been found using these models. Jensen (1968) used a sample of 115 open end mutual funds for ten-year period 1955-1964, with annual data. He used returns both net and gross of expenses but found very few significantly positive alpha coefficients, suggesting that mutual funds showed very little ability collectively or individually to forecast security prices. Henriksson (1984) examined the performance of 116 open-end mutual funds using monthly data from February 1968 to

June 1980. Unfortunately the results show little evidence of market-timing ability and selectivity ability. (Only three of the 116 funds exhibited positive estimates for $\beta_{2}$ with $95 \%$ confidence and only one fund exhibited a significantly positive estimate of Alpha). Goetzmann and Zheng(2006) report the performance of a portfolio comprised of all equity mutual funds that existed in the CRSP database from the beginning of the data through 20045. 16 months of returns. The result of Alpha was negative, but the underperformance is less than normal expenses, so this evidence is consistent with the hypothesis that equity mutual funds have selection skill but probably do not have enough to cover expenses. Along with these two examples, almost all the early empirical work indicates that superior forecasting ability does not exist among mutual fund industry.

Further improvements were made years later by adding more factors which may have an influence on the mutual fund performance besides market factor. Banz (1981) found that stocks with small capitalization showed higher average returns than large stocks - an excess return or 'seize' effect that could not be explained by the CAPM. Other authors found that leverage (Bhandari, 1988), book to market ratio (Stattman, 1980; Rosenberg et al., 1985) and earnings-price ratio (Basu, 1983) all contributed to the explanation of cross-sectional stock returns.

Developing this work, Fama and French (1992) identified two factors other than the market factor which determined average stock portfolio return: size and Book-to-Market ratio, claiming that these absorb the effects of size, E/P, leverage, and book-to-market equity in the cross-sectional average returns on NYSE, AMEX, and NASDAQ stocks.

The Fama and French (1992) model is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j t}-R_{f}=\alpha+b R M O(t)+s S M B(t)+h H M L(t) \tag{2.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $R_{j t}$ is the return of the portfolio j at time $\mathrm{t}, R_{f}$ is the risk-free rate, and RMO is the return on a market index. The three factor $\mathbf{b}$ is analogous to the classical $\beta$ but not equal to it, since there are now two additional factors in the equation. SMB stands for 'small market capitalization minus big' and HML for 'high book-to-price ratio minus low'. They
respectively measure the excess returns to size and of 'value' stocks over 'growth' stocks. SMB is often referred to as the 'size factor' and HML as 'value factor'.

Fama and French found a negative relation between average stock return and firm size (stocks with the smallest market capitalization have the largest return) but that book-to-market, offers a significantly positive premium.

Fama and French (1993) extend their work by adding factors to explain returns government and corporate bonds in addition to those for common stocks. They identify two bond-market factors: a 'term factor', which captures the risk due to unexpected fluctuations in interest rates, and a 'default' factor, as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j t}-R_{f}=\alpha+m T E R M(t)+d D E F+e(t) \tag{2.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

TERM and DEF are respectively the excess return of the monthly long-term government bond return over the one-month Treasury bill rate measured and the excess return on a portfolio of long-term corporate bonds over long-term government bond.

Fama and French claim that these two bond-market factors capture the common variation in stocks as well as bonds returns. Thus they give a five factor model

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j t}-R_{f}=\alpha+b R M O(t)+s \operatorname{SMB}(t)+h H M L(t)+m T E R M(t)+d D E F(t)+e(t) \tag{2.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

To examine whether factors that are important in bond returns can help explain stock returns also, and vice versa. They used a time-series approach and the tests results show that TERM and DEF slopes for corporate bonds are 1 and that for stocks that around 0.8 , which shows that these two risk factors have a common impact on both corporate bonds and stocks. But they interpret the results differently for stocks and bonds. The intercept from the time-series regression of the portfolio's excess return on the five explanatory returns is the average abnormal return which can be used to judge a manager's ability to beat the market (similar to Jensen's $\alpha$ ), that is whether he can use expertise to generate greater returns than the returns from those five indices.

Jegadeesh and Titman (1993) suggested that past performance of mutual funds might be able to predict the future, they call it momentum effect. Carhart (1997) proposed a four-factor model to test short- and long-term persistence in mutual funds, based on both the FamaFrench model and momentum:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j t}=\alpha_{i T}+b_{i T} R M R F_{t}+s_{i T} S M B_{t}+h_{i T} H M L_{t}+p_{i T} P R 1 Y R_{t}+e_{i t} \tag{2.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

RMRF is the market factor; SMB and HML are size and book-to-market factors from Fama and French model, PR1YR captures Jegadeesh and Titman's (1993) one-year momentum anomaly.

PR1YR in this model is calculated as equal-weighted average return of firms with the highest 30 percent eleven-month returns lagged one month minus the equal-weighted average of firms with the lowest 30 percent eleven-month returns lagged one month.

Carhart (1997) found that the excess returns from the 3 -factor model were significantly negative for the previous year's loser stock portfolios but significantly positive for last year's winners. However, the 4 -factor model containing eliminates these patterns in excess returns, indicating the great improvement to the 3 -factor model.

To test short-term persistence, Carhart (1997) used lagged one-year returns. Mutual funds were sorted into decile portfolios according to their previous calendar year's return. Funds with the highest and lowest past one-year returns comprise deciles 1 and 10 respectively.

The 4-factor model explains most of the spread and pattern in these portfolios, with sensitivities to the size (SMB) and momentum (PR1YR) factors accounting for most of the explanation. The returns to the top decile funds have a significant and positive relationship with the one-year momentum factor, while the returns in the bottom decile are significantly negatively correlated with the factor. In addition, Carhart (1997) found that expenses, turnover, load fees and transaction costs were negatively related to fund performance. Decile 10 in particular suffers higher expenses, turnover, load fees and transaction costs. Overall, the results show robust short-run persistence and most of the persistence can be explained by the
sensitivities to the four factors along with expenses, and transaction costs. However, when using two- to four year returns, the 4 -factor model explains little of the excess return and nothing of the excess return in 5 -year lagged portfolios. Thus evidence of long-term persistence was not found.

Carhart (1997) also sorted mutual funds by alphas instead of returns when ranking the portfolios into deciles, using their 4 -factor alphas estimated over the prior 3 years. He then calculated the mean monthly excess returns on the funds in each decile portfolio for the first five years after ranking. The results show that the highest decile maintains a persistently high mean return for a full five years after the portfolio is initially formed, but that the mean returns on the lowest nine deciles converge after two years. However, the 4-factor model alphas on this portfolio over the five-year post-ranking period are not significantly different from zero. This suggests that these funds did not provide returns substantially beyond those predicted by the 4 -factor model. Carhart (1997) therefore concluded that the persistence in mutual fund performance did not reflect the forecasting ability of fund managers.

The above models all assume constant risk coefficient, which was criticized by Ferson and Schadt (1996) who pointed out that variation in the expected returns and risks of stocks and bonds were likely to be due to some changes in dividend yields, interest rates or other variables. Ferson and Schadt(1996) claim that the traditional methods suffer from a number of biases, in particular that beta and the expected return cannot be constant as assumed in the traditional models. If expectations of future returns and risks fluctuate with this publicly available information, the measurement of the manager's forecasting ability should accommodate the time variation too. Traditional market-timing models assume that any information related with future market returns is superior information. However, Ferson and Schadt (1996) consider this as a major drawback and claim that the skills of utilizing information readily available to the public should not be judged as superior forecasting ability. The fund manager's forecasting ability should come from non-public information, so that, the essence of the conditional approach is to improve the traditional methods by accommodating common sources of variation from public information, using lagged instruments.

The betas of mutual funds will naturally change, for several reasons. First, the betas of the underlying assets may change over time. Second, fund managers may actively adjust the portfolio asset weights causing the fund beta to change. Last but not least, open-ended funds
will experience net cash inflows and outflows from time to time, to allocate new cash or withdrawing underlying assets may lead to changes in fund betas. Betas will also vary as the percentage of cash held by the fund fluctuates. However, these three reasons can be reflected by two time-variation factors.

The lagged instruments used by Ferson and Schadt (1996) are the lagged level of the onemonth Treasury bill yield and the lagged dividend yield. The conditional beta is illustrated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta(t)=b_{0}+b_{1}\left(D / P_{t-1}\right)+b_{2}\left(T B_{t-1}\right) \tag{2.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\beta(t)$ is some (undefined) function of $\mathrm{D} / \mathrm{P}$ and TB . The linearization of equation (2.2.29) makes it operational. $(\mathrm{D} / \mathrm{P})$ is the lagged value of the market dividend yield and TB is the lagged value of a short-term Treasury yield. Thus the mutual fund's beta is conditional upon lagged dividend yield and short-term Treasury yield, which reflect the state of the stock market. $b_{0}$ is a 'target' or average beta, and remaining terms represent deviations of beta from target. Thus the manager's beta will change for period $t$ in response to public information available at $t-1$.

Specifically, the fund betas will be higher if the two extra factors are positive, but this is a change in beta arising from the use of publically available information. So there should be no excess return to the fund in consequence.

The empirical results from Ferson and Schadt (1996) show that the coefficients on the dividend yield are positive, whereas those on the Treasury bill are negative, with both coefficients statistically significant for most of the data. This is reasonable since high dividend yields are a positive market indicator and high short-term interest rates predict low stock returns.

Using the modified $\beta$ in (2.2.27), the conditional model has the following regression for the managed portfolio return:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R P_{t}=\alpha+b_{0} R M_{1}+b_{1}\left[R M_{t}(D / P)_{t-1}\right]+b_{2}\left[R M_{t}(T B)_{t-1}\right]+\text { error } \tag{2.2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

The conditional model adds two additional variables to the traditional regression, $\left[R M_{t}(D / P)_{t-1}\right]$ and $\left[R M_{t}(T B)_{t-1}\right]$. They are interaction terms between the market return and the lagged values of the market indicators. These interaction terms pick up the sources of movements in beta through time. The intercept, $\alpha$ is the conditional alpha, which measures the abnormal performance representing the fund manager's superior ability to earn returns not available by using public information.

In linearised form the conditional Jensen model is written as :

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{p t+1}=\alpha_{p}+\delta_{1 p} r_{m t+1}+\delta_{2 p}^{\prime}\left(z_{t} r_{m t+1}\right)+\varepsilon_{p t+1} \tag{2.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

$z_{t} r_{m t+1}$ is the product of the market factor with the lagged information. This is both more and less general than equation (2.2.28). It is less general because (2.2.28) has been lineraised. More general because it allows you any vector of public information, not just D/P and TB.

The classic market timing regression is the quadratic regression of Treynor and Mazuy (1966):

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{p t+1}=\alpha_{p}+b_{p} r_{m t+1}+\gamma_{t m n}\left[r_{m, t+1}\right]^{2}+v_{p t+1} \tag{2.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

A conditional version of the Treynor-Mazuy regression is

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{p t+1}=\alpha_{p}+b_{p} r_{m t+1}+C_{p}^{\prime}\left(z_{t} r_{m t+1}\right)+\gamma_{t m c}\left[r_{m, t+1}\right]^{2}+v_{p t+1} \tag{2.2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

The term $C_{p}^{\prime}\left(z_{t} r_{m t+1}\right)$ controls for the public information effect.
To be consistent with Equation(2.2.28), (2.2.31) can also be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
R P_{t}=\alpha+b_{0} R M_{1}+b_{1}\left[R M_{t}(D / P)_{t-1}\right]+b_{2}\left[R M_{t}(T B)_{t-1}\right]+\gamma R M_{t}^{2}+\text { error } \tag{2.2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

The unconditional Merton and Henriksson model is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{p t+1}=\alpha_{p}+b_{p} r_{m t+1}+\gamma_{u}\left[r_{m, t+1}\right]^{+}+v_{p t+1} \tag{2.2.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left[r_{m, t+1}\right]^{+}$is defined as $\operatorname{Max}\left(0, r_{m, t+1}\right)$
This is transformed to a conditional model by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{p t+1}=b_{p} r_{m t+1}+B_{d}^{\prime}\left(z_{t} r_{m t+1}\right)+\gamma_{c} r_{m t+1}^{*}+\Delta^{\prime}\left[z_{t} r_{m t+1}^{*}\right]+u_{p, t+1} \tag{2.2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma_{c}=b_{u p}-b_{d}$ and $\Delta=B_{u p}-B_{d}$. Positive market timing ability is shown where $\gamma_{c}+\Delta^{\prime} z_{t}>0$

The empirical work of Ferson and Schadt (1996) shows that controlling for common variation using lagged instruments, yields an increase in the number of observed positive coefficients, compared with unconditional models.

All the above models use a general benchmark, an alternative, however, is to place the funds into different categories and adopt a set of benchmarks for each category. Roll (1978) has shown that single-index measures of performance are sensitive to the type of benchmark portfolio used. This is, the Beta when using the Standard and Poor's Index is not the same as the Beta calculated when using the Dow-Jones index as the benchmark portfolio. Ross (1976) developed arbitrage pricing theory (APT) which could overcome this problem.

Sharpe (1992) created a multi-index model under the assumption that a fund manager allocates investment among $n$ asset classes. Bills, Intermediate-term Government Bonds, Long-term Government Bonds, Corporate Bonds, Mortgage-Related Securities, LargeCapitalization Value Stocks, Large-Capitalization Growth Stocks, Medium-Capitalization Stocks, Small-Capitalization Stocks, Non-U.S. Bonds, European and Asian Stocks, Japanese Stocks. Sharpe's (1992) model is illustrated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{R}_{i}=\left[b_{i 1} \tilde{F}_{i 1}+b_{i 2} \tilde{F}_{i 2} \mathrm{~K} b_{i n} \tilde{F}_{i n}\right]+\tilde{e}_{i} \tag{2.2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

$R_{i}$ represents the return on asset $i, F_{i 1}$ represents the value of the first factor, $F_{i 2}$ the value of the second factor, $F_{i n}$ the value of the nth factor. $e_{i}$ the error term. Once the factors are determined, the exposure to these factors can then be measured using the above equation. Rearranging (2.2.35) gives the following form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{e}=\widetilde{R}_{i}-\left[b_{i 1} \tilde{1}_{1}+b_{i 2} \tilde{F}_{2} \mathrm{~K} b_{i n} \tilde{F}_{n}\right]_{i} \tag{2.2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

The error term thus equals the difference between the return on the fund and that of the weighted factor indices. The goal of style analysis is to select the style (exposure to these asset classes) that minimizes the variance of this difference. The error term is thus called the fund's 'tracking error' and its variance the fund's 'tracking variance'. Shape uses quadratic programming to determine a fund's exposures to changes in the returns of these factors (calculating the $b_{\text {in }}$ ) which has the minimum tracking variance. This method is termed style analysis. The $R^{2}$ from this programming is defined as the contribution to the fund's style and the remainder $1-R^{2}$ to the fund manager's selection.

Using this approach, Sharpe (1995) analyses the performance of the LS 100 funds - the 100 largest, seasoned U.S. funds that are chosen from bond funds, stock funds, balanced funds, global and international funds. Sharp uses style analysis to determine the sensitivities (betas) of these funds to 15 indexes. He defines a fund's selection return as the difference between its return and that of its style, as explained above. Thus selection returns equal to the return on LS100 minus that of the indicies. The statistics show that the average selection return is not significantly different from zero, suggesting that an actively-managed fund is not likely to beat a passive portfolio with the same type. This conclusion is consistent with other studies such as Elton, Gruber, Das, and Hlavka (1993), Brown and Goetzmann (1995) and Malkiel (1995).

Those are most important models in the portfolio evaluation, and one of the new research points is dynamic risk shifting modelling and how it can improve the accuracy of measurement of the funds performance. The following part of this literature review will shift to another methodology in operational research area. It is called data envelopment analysis. Data envelopment analysis gives completely different scenario from portfolio evaluation. It is
a nonparametric analysis technique which was proposed by Charnes et al. (1978), and it was firstly used in measurement of the performance of educational institutions.

### 2.2 Data Envelopment Analysis

DEA is a linear programming formulation that defines a correspondence between multiple inputs and multiple outputs. It is a non-parametric analysis that does not require any theoretical models (CAPM or APT) as measurement benchmarks. Instead DEA measures how well a fund performs relative to the best set of funds within the category. DEA model is flexible and can evaluate performance on a number of outputs and inputs simultaneously.

The following paragraphs describe the DEA formulation as given in Charnes et al. (1978). The simple DEA program is formulated as a fractional programming problem and is then reduced to a linear programming problem that is easy to compute. In general, the program maximizes the ratio of the weighted average of the multiple outputs to the weighted average of the multiple inputs. Charnes et al (1978)'s idea is to define the efficiency measure by assigning to each unit the most favourable weights. This means that the weights will generally not be the same for the different units; therefore, the choice of the weights should not be responsible for the inefficiency of a fund.

In DEA, the organization under study is called a DMU (Decision Making Unit). The DMU is regarded as the entity responsible for converting inputs into outputs and whose performances are to be evaluated.

Define the input and output data for $D M U_{j}$
$y_{r j}$ amount of output $r$ for unit $j$
$x_{r j}$ amount of input $i$ for unit $j$
For each $D M U_{j}$, give the input and output as yet unknown weights
$u_{r} \quad$ weight assigned to output $r$
$v_{r}$ weight assigned to input $i$
The DEA efficiency measure for a decision making unit $j$ is given by a ratio of the weighted sum of outputs to the weighted sum of inputs:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h=\frac{\sum_{r=1}^{t} u_{r} y_{r j}}{\sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j}} \tag{2.2.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

The weights in the ratio (2.2.37) are chosen in such a way that the efficiency measure $h$ has an upper bound, usually chosen equal to 1 , which will be reached only by the most efficient units. For each decision making unit the most favourable weights are chosen; they are computed by maximizing the efficiency ratio of the unit considered, subject to the constraints that the efficiency ratios of all units, computed with the same weights, have an upper bound of 1 .

Formally, to compute the DEA efficiency measure for a target decision making unit separately identified by the index $j_{o} \in\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ we have to solve the following fractional linear programming problem:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\max \quad & h_{0}=\frac{\sum_{r=1}^{t} u_{r} y_{r_{0}}}{\sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j_{0}}} \\
\text { s.t. } \quad & \frac{\sum_{r=1}^{t} u_{r} y_{r j}}{\sum_{i j}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j_{0}}} \leq 1 \quad j=1, \ldots, n, \\
& \sum_{i=1} \\
& u_{r} \geq 0, \quad r=1  \tag{2.2.38}\\
& v_{i} \geq 0, \quad i=1, \ldots, m
\end{array}
$$

The optimal objective function value (2.2.38) represents the efficiency measure assigned to the target unit $j_{o}$ considered. To find the efficiency measures of other decision making units we have to solve similar problems, targeted on each unit in turn.

Mathematically, the nonnegativity constraint in (2.2.38) is not sufficient for the fractional terms $\frac{\sum_{r=1}^{t} u_{r} y_{r j_{0}}}{\sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j_{0}}}$ to have a positive value. To solve this problem, the fractional problem (2.2.38) is conveniently replaced by an equivalent linear programming problem; by letting $\sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j_{0}}=1$ we obtain that so called input-oriented Charnes, Cooper and Rhodes (CCR) linear model.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\max & \sum_{r=1}^{t} u_{r} y_{r_{j}} \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j_{0}}=1, \\
& \sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j}-\sum_{i=1}^{m} v_{i} x_{i j} \leq 0, \quad j=1, \ldots, n  \tag{2.2.39}\\
& u_{r} \geq 0, \quad r=1, \ldots, t, \\
& v_{i} \geq 0, \quad i=1, \ldots, m
\end{array}
$$

Efficiency measures equal to 1 characterize the efficient units: at least with the most favourable weights, these units cannot be dominated by the other ones in the set, and therefore they lie on the efficient frontier.

The points either on the efficient frontier or within it are possible, therefore the set of feasible activities is called the production possibility set and is denoted by $P$. Arranging the data sets in matrices $X=\left(x_{j}\right)$ and $Y=\left(y_{j}\right) ; x_{j} \in R^{m}, y_{j} \in R^{s}$. We can define the production possibility set $P$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P=\left\{(x, y) \mid x \geq \sum_{j} \lambda_{j} x_{j} ; y \leq \sum_{j} \lambda_{j} y_{j} ; \lambda_{j} \geq 0 \forall j\right\} \tag{2.2.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $\lambda_{j}$ is a semi positive vector in $R^{n}$.

Based on the matrix $\left(X_{j}, Y_{J}\right),(2.2 .39)$ can be expressed in its dual form using a real variable $\theta$ and a non-negative vector $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right)^{T}$ of variables as follows ([Envelopment form]):

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
\text { Min } & \theta \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} x_{i j} \leq \theta x_{i j_{0}} \quad i=1 \ldots m \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} y_{r j} \geq y_{r j_{0}} \quad r=1 \ldots s,  \tag{2.2.41}\\
& \lambda_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N
\end{array}
$$

Where $\theta$ measures the technical input efficiency. It is known as the envelopment DEA model and it measures DEA efficiency with reference to a production possibility set boundary which 'envelops' the input and output levels observed at DMUs. To illustrate, see graph 2.2.1 for a simple case with two inputs $x_{1}, x_{2}$, the minimum $\theta$ gives the fraction each point needs to contract radially to arrive at the efficient frontier $B D G E F$. (e.g. point A contracts to point G )


Figure 2.2.1 Input Space Representation

When $\theta_{0}=1$ at the optimal solution to (2.2.41), then $D M U_{0}$ lies on the efficient frontier, and it is deemed to be $100 \%$ efficient. However, the $100 \%$ efficiency in this sense is not necessarily Pareto-efficient because improvements to the individual levels of some inputs may still be possible. Such improvements are captured in the slacks. Therefore, in order to guarantee Pareto-efficiency, (2.2.41) can also be written in another form, in which inequalities are transformed into equalities using slacks.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Min } & \theta-\varepsilon\left[\sum_{i=1}^{m} S_{i}^{-}+\sum_{r=1}^{s} S_{r}^{+}\right] \\
\text {s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} x_{i j}=\theta x_{i j_{0}}-S_{i}^{-}, \quad i=1 \ldots m  \tag{2.2.42}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} y_{r j}=y_{r_{j_{0}}}+S_{r}^{+}, \quad r=1 \ldots s \\
& \lambda_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N, \quad \lambda_{j} \geq 0, \quad \lambda_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N, \quad S_{i}^{-}, S^{+} \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Where $S_{i}^{-}$and $S_{r}^{+}$are slacks, $\varepsilon$ is non-archimedean penalty term which has very small value such as $10^{-6}$. The priority is given to the minimization of $\theta_{0}$, once $\theta_{0}$ has been minimized, the model seeks the maximum sum of the slack value $S_{i}^{-}$and $S_{r}^{+}$. If any one of these values is positive at the optimal solution to the model it means that the corresponding input of DMU $j_{0}$ can improve further, until it satisfies $\theta_{0}=1$ and all slacks are zero. Because slacks are multiplied by a very small value (identified by non-archimedean penalty term $\varepsilon$ ), the resulting objective junction is virtually equal to the optimal value of $\theta_{0}$.

It can be seen that the CCR model gives a piecewise linear production surface which represents a production frontier: input oriented model aims to minimize inputs while satisfying at least the given output level; it gives the minimum amount of input required to achieve the given output levels. There is another type of model called the output-oriented model that attempts to maximize outputs without requiring more of any of the observed input values. The model shows as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \gamma \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} x_{i j} \leq x_{i j_{0}}, \quad i=1 \ldots m,  \tag{2.2.43}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j} \geq \gamma_{r_{0}}, \quad r=1 \ldots s \\
& \alpha_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N
\end{array}
$$

Where $1 / \gamma$ measures the technical output efficiency. And the corresponding graph 2.2.2 of simple case with two outputs is as follows; in which maximum $\gamma$ measures how many times
each point must expand in order to get the efficient frontier denoted by $B D G E F$. (e.g. point A expand to G)


Figure 2.2.2 Output Space Representation

When $\gamma_{0}=1$ at the optimal solution to (2.2.43), which means $D M U_{0}$ lies on the efficient frontier. However, it is not necessarily Pareto-efficient because improvements to the individual levels of some outputs may still be possible. Such improvements are captured in the slacks. Therefore, (2.2.43) can also be written in the following form to achieve Paretoefficiency.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } \quad & \gamma+\varepsilon\left[\sum_{i=1}^{m} I_{i}+\sum_{r=1}^{s} O_{r}\right] \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} x_{i j}=x_{i j_{0}}-I_{i}, \quad i=1 \ldots m,  \tag{2.2.44}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j}=\gamma_{r j_{0}}+O_{r}, \quad r=1, \ldots, s \\
& \alpha_{j} \geq 0, j=1 \ldots N, \quad I_{i}, O_{r} \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

Where $I_{i}$ and $O_{r}$ are slacks, $\varepsilon$ is non-archimedean penalty term. In (2.2.44), first, the priority is given to the maximisation of $\gamma_{0}$, and second, the maximization of slacks is sought. If any of the values of $I_{i}$ or $O_{r}$ is positive at the optimal solution to the model, it means that the corresponding output of DMU $j_{0}$ can improve further, after its output levels have been
expanded by proportion $\gamma_{0}$. When $\gamma_{0}=1$ and all slacks are zero, Pareto-efficiency is guaranteed. Because slacks are multiplied by a very small value of $\varepsilon$, the resulting objective junction is virtually equal to the optimal value of $\gamma_{0}$

The above model is CCR model, which is built on the assumption of constant returns to scale in which case inputs and outputs are subject to change proportionally. For example, $\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ change to ( $\alpha x_{1}, \alpha x_{2}$ ) (with $\alpha>0$ ) In fact, since the very beginning of DEA studies, various extensions of the CCR model have been proposed, among which the BCC (Banker-CharnesCooper) model is representative. The BCC model is a variable returns to scale (VRS) version in which case inputs and outputs do not change proportionally.

Assessing the DEA under VRS compared with the one under CRS in example of single input and single output.

The CCR model assumes the constant returns-to-scale production possibility set, i.e., the radial expansion and reduction of all observed DMUs. On the other hand, the BCC model assumes that convex combinations of the observed DMUs form the production possibility set. If a DMU is fully efficient $(100 \%)$ in both the CCR and BCC scores, it is operating in the most productive scale size. If a DMU has full BCC efficiency but a low CCR score, it is not scale efficient. Thus, the scale efficiency of a DMU is defined by the ratio of the two scores.


Figure 2.2.3 Graph Technology Representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
S E=\frac{\theta_{C C R}^{*}}{\theta_{B C C}^{*}} \tag{2.2.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Scale efficiency measures the impact of scale size on the productivity of a DMU. The Pure technical input efficiency will never be less than its technical input efficiency, so we have scale efficiency $<=1$.

Rearranged (2.2.45) we get $\theta_{C C R}^{*}=\theta_{B C C}^{*} * S E$ which means Technical Efficiency (TE) $=$ Pure Technical Efficiency (PTE) * Scale Efficiency (SE). The CCR models estimates the overall efficiency. This efficiency comprises technical efficiency and scale efficiency. The BCC model measures pure Technical efficiency. Technical efficiency describes the efficiency in converting inputs to outputs, while scale efficiency recognizes that economies of scale cannot be attained at all scales of production, and therefore there is one most productive scale size, where the scale-efficiency is maximised at 100 per cent. This decomposition detects where the inefficiency lies. i.e. whether it is caused by technical problems (PTE) or by improper scale (SE) or by both.

In figure 2.2.3, under CRS, the efficient boundary is O2. However, under VRS, the efficient boundary O 2 is no longer valid since we cannot scale up and down along the line O2. Instead, we have the piecewise efficient boundary 3-2-5. Therefore, the technical input efficiency of DMU 4 is AC/A4.

Formally, the BCC models are as follows:
Let us consider the $N$ DMUs $\mathrm{j}=1 \ldots \mathrm{~N}$ using m inputs to secure s outputs. Let us denote $x_{i j}$ and $y_{r j}$ as the $i$ th input and $r$ th output of the DMU j .

Input-orientation

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Min } & \theta-\varepsilon\left[\sum_{i=1}^{m} S_{i}^{-}+\sum_{r=1}^{s} S_{r}^{+}\right] \\
\text {s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} x_{i j}=\theta x_{i j_{0}}-S_{i}^{-}, \quad i=1 \ldots m, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} y_{r j}=y_{r j_{0}}+S_{r}^{+}, \quad r=1 \ldots s  \tag{2.2.46}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j}=1, \\
& \lambda_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N \quad S_{i}^{-}, S_{r}^{+} \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

It differs from the formula under CRS only in that it includes the so-called convexity constraint $\sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j}=1$. This constraint does not allow any free scaling up or down to form a referent point for efficiency measurement. The convexity constraint $\sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j}=1$ essentially ensures that an inefficient firm is only 'benchmarked' against firms of a similar size. This convexity restriction is not imposed in the CRS case. Hence, in a CRS DEA, a firm may be benchmarked against firms that are substantially larger (smaller) than it. In this instance the $\lambda$ -weights sum to a value less than (greater than) one. $\sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} \leq 1$ ensures that the $j$-th firm is not 'benchmarked' against firms that are substantially larger than it, but maybe compared with firms smaller than it. The optimal level of input efficiency $\theta^{*}$ is termed as pure technical input efficiency of DMU $j_{0}$ and they are 'net' of any scale effects.

Output Orientation

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \gamma+\varepsilon\left[\sum_{i=1}^{m} I_{i}+\sum_{r=1}^{s} O_{r}\right] \\
\text { s.t. } \quad & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} x_{i j}=x_{i j_{0}}-I_{i}, \quad i=1 \ldots m, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j}=\gamma_{r j_{0}}+O_{r}, \quad r=1 \ldots s,  \tag{2.2.47}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j}=\gamma y_{r j_{0}}+O_{r}, r=1 \ldots s \quad r=1 \ldots s, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j}=1 \quad \alpha_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N, \quad I_{i}, O_{r} \geq 0
\end{array}
$$

where $\varepsilon$ is a non-Archimedean infinitesimal. Therefore $\frac{1}{\gamma^{*}}$ is a measure of output efficiency of DMU $j_{0}$. Under VRS, $\frac{1}{\gamma^{*}}$ is the pure technical output efficiency of DMU $j_{0}$.

The above DEA models assume that the units which are combined by the observed units in any way can exist, in other words, convexity is assumed. So the underlying units are compared with the efficient frontier, which are hypothetical but potentially efficient combinations of the actual observations. However, there is some debate in the literature concerning the validity of this assumption. For example, in situations where commodities are not continuously divisible, the assumption of convexity does not apply. The best-known non convex technological set is the free disposal hull (FDH). It requires input and output disposability (i.e. there are slacks in the inputs and outputs which can be reduced without using up other additional resources). The efficiency frontier in the FDH is composed only of observed production units.

Free disposal hull (FDH) analysis is an alternative method to the conventional DEA methodology which was introduced by Deprins, Simar, and Tulkens (1984) and further developed by Tulkens (1993) and Vanden Eckaut, Jamar and Tulkens (1993).

Graph 2.2.4 illustrates what a FDH is like. In this example, there are two inputs $X_{1}$ and $X_{2}$. The DEA isoquant is the piecewise linear frontier connecting B, D, E and F, with C and G as
inefficient points. The FDH isoquant is the stepped line connecting B, D, C, E and F. Each of these points is then regarded as efficient. It is only observed point G in the FDH counts as inefficient.


Figure 2.2.4 Free disposal hull (FDH) input space representation

Formally, the free disposal hull (FDH) efficient frontier suggested by Tulkens (1993) is as follows:

$$
T_{D}^{*}=\left\{(x, y): x \geq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \lambda_{j} x_{j}, y \leq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \lambda_{j} y_{j}, \lambda_{j} \in\{0,1\}, \sum_{j=1}^{n} \lambda_{j}=1\right\} \text { (2.2.48) }
$$

This is a mixed-integer programming problem as the weights $\lambda_{j}$ can take only 0 or 1 as values.


Figure 2.2.5 FDH Production Possibilities Set

Figure 2.2.5 is an example of FDH using a single input and a single output. The efficient frontier is $X P_{1} A P_{3} B P_{4}$ and the production possibility set is estimated by the area on and to the right of this frontier. $P_{1}, P_{3}, P_{4}$ are on the frontier while $P_{2}$ lies inside the frontier. Therefore, $P_{1}, P_{3}, P_{4}$ are efficient and $P_{2}$ is inefficient. The efficiency score of $P_{2}$ can be measured by the radial contraction in input needed to reach the frontier. This is the ratio: $P R / P P_{2}$.

The input orientated FDH model is as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta^{*}= & \operatorname{Min} \quad \theta \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} x_{i j} \leq \theta x_{i_{0}}, \quad i=1 \ldots m, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j} y_{r j} \geq y_{r_{0}}, \quad r=1 \ldots s,  \tag{2.2.49}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \lambda_{j}=1 \\
& \lambda_{j} \in\{0,1\}, \quad j=2,3, \ldots, N
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly, the following formula gives the output-oriented FDH:

$$
\begin{align*}
\gamma^{*}= & \text { Max } \quad \gamma \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} x_{i j} \leq x_{i j_{0}}, \quad i=1 \ldots m \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j} \geq y_{r r_{0}}, \quad r=1 \ldots s, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j} y_{r j} \geq \gamma_{r r_{0}}, \quad r=1 \ldots s,  \tag{2.2.50}\\
& \alpha_{j} \geq 0, \quad j=1 \ldots N, \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} \alpha_{j}=1 ; \quad \alpha_{j} \in\{0,1\} \quad j=1,2, \ldots, N
\end{align*}
$$

Where $1 / \gamma^{*}$ measures the technical output efficiency

Murthi et at. (1997) were the first to apply the DEA method to fund performance evaluation. They presented a non-parametric benefit and cost analysis in the original CCR ratio form with standard deviation of returns, expense ratio, load and turnover as inputs and mean gross return as output. They developed a new measure that avoids the benchmark problem that exists in the traditional portfolio analysis. They employed data for a sample of 2083 US equity mutual funds for the third quarter of 1993. They detected a significant positive relation between their efficiency index and Jensen's alpha for all categories of funds, which indicated that the DEA measure of performance is consistent with traditional indices while offering more advantages over the traditional methods.

Basso \& Funari (2001) tested the DEA performance indexes for 47 Italian investment funds that were classified as equity, bond and balanced funds in the period 01/01/1997 to 30/06/1999. They used several risk measures such as standard deviation, the square root of the half-variance and beta coefficient as inputs, and other inputs include subscription and redemption costs. The expected return and the stochastic dominance indicator defined using the DARA criterion were used as outputs. Also they considered subscription fees and redemption fees when calculating the costs. The results indicate that it is important to deduct the subscription and redemption costs when determine the fund ranking.

Galagedera and Silvapulle (2002) conducted DEA models to assess the relative performance of 257 Australian investment funds for the period 1995 to 1999. They used four output variables to capture the short-,the medium- and the long-term gross performances and seven inputs including four standard deviations of the 1-,2-,3- and 5-year gross performance, sales charges, operating expenses and minimum initial investment. Their results suggest that scale efficiency is the main source of overall technical efficiency, and that risk-averse funds with high positive net asset flows tend to have higher overall technical efficiency as well as the scale efficiency, while structure, classification, size and the age of funds have little impact on the level of relative efficiency.

Daraio \& Simar (2006) proposed a robust non-parametric performance measure based on the concept of order-m frontier and on a probabilistic approach. They compared the performance of six categories of funds: asset allocation, aggressive growth, balanced, equity income, growth and growth income, and examined more than 3000 US mutual funds for the period June 2001-May 2002. They used standard deviation, expense ratio, and turnover and fund size as inputs and mean return as output. Also, economies of scale, slacks and market risks are investigated. The results show that for some categories including asset allocation, aggressive growth and equity income, the investment funds did not lie on the mean-variance efficiency frontier due to the slacks. In addition, the economies of scale deriving from portfolio management and shareholder service have no impact on most investment funds in terms of efficiency.

Lozano \& Gutierez (2008) combined DEA with stochastic dominance criteria and performed an efficiency analysis for a sample of 108 Spanish funds in a four-year period from January 2002 to December 2005. They presented six distinct DEA-like linear programming (LP) models that incorporate second-order stochastic dominance under the assumption that investors are rational, risk-averse. They conducted four return-risk DEA models which use return as input and risk as output and two return-safety DEA models which are pure output DEA models with both return and safety measures as outputs. Similar results were obtained from five of the proposed LP models.

One of the main advantages of these non-parametric frontiers is that they can handle multiple dimensions simultaneously and that these yield a single real number performance. However, there is no evident rule for the selection among various candidates of input-like and output-
like variables. Therefore it is not always clear whether a certain variable should be included in the model calculating the efficiency measure, or rather should be used to explain the observed variations in the efficiency measures in the second stage analysis.

Recently, some researchers gave a new angle to the mutual fund evaluation. They followed the Markowitz portfolio theory and related the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in the mean-variance space. Markowitz portfolio theory postulates that an investor chooses unobserved subjective weights to maximise the utility of a portfolio subject to constraints on the mean (M) and variance (V) of the sum of the weighted returns. Therefore the Markowitz model establishes a tangency point between an unobserved indifference curve in MV space and the efficient portfolio frontier. Morey and Morey (1999) developed a mutual funds efficiency measure in a traditional meanvariance (MV) model. They presented two basic quadratic programming approaches to identify those funds that are efficient. The purpose of the Morey \& Morey model is to compare the relative improvement that could be achieved by a sample portfolio when compared to other candidate portfolios. It uses the Markowitz model as a template for specifying the theoretical optimizing behaviour of the fund managers. The Morey \& Morey model solves for objective weights that establish the relative distance from the efficient portfolio frontier of each sample portfolio. The efficient frontier simulates the unobserved Markowitz frontier and compares the achieved realizations of the sample portfolios. Therefore the Morey \& Morey model measures the relative success of different fund managers assuming that their subjective optimizing behaviour can be described by the Markowitz theory of behaviour. It measures the relative success of different fund managers in behaving like Markowitz optimizers, and therefore differs in purpose and implementation from the Markowitz model. The first quadratic program is mean return augmentation, it is as follows:

Determine $w_{j} \geq 0\left(j=1,2, \ldots j_{0}, \ldots, N\right)$ and $\theta \geq 1$ so that:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \theta \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{j, t}\right) \leq \sigma_{j_{0}}^{2}  \tag{2.2.51}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j, t}\right) \geq \vartheta E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right) \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

Where $\theta \geq 1$ and higher $\theta$ indicates poorer performance. So the frontier funds are those with theta value of one.

The second quadratic program is risk contraction, and the formula is as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Min } & Z \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j, t}\right) \geq E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right)  \tag{2.2.52}\\
& \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{J, t}\right) \leq Z \sigma_{j_{0, t}}^{2} \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

Where $Z \leq 1$ and the efficient frontier is composed by funds with $Z$ equal to one.

Figure 2.2.6 illustrates these two quadratic models. They give different but similar rankings of different mutual funds. Further, Morey and Morey (1999) claimed that even a fund with $\theta$ or $Z$ equal to one could still have further slacks possible. Therefore, in addition to the quadratic optimization, they apply a standard device used in DEA which is a lexicographic, pre-emptive programming to help identify the maximum increases possible in mean returns or the reduction in risks for a given fund.


Figure 2.2.6 Different paths to the efficiency frontier

Later, W. Briec, K. Kerstens, And J. B. Lesourd (2004) applied the directional distance function and its properties into the mutual fund evaluation and introduced an efficiency improvement possibility (EIP) function. It is as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{g}(x)=\sup \left\{\delta ;\left(V(R(x))-\delta_{g V}, E(R(x))+\delta_{g E}\right) \in R\right\} \tag{2.2.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $S_{g}(x)$ is the EIP function for the portfolio x in the direction of vector $g=\left(-g_{V}, g_{E}\right)$. It allows simultaneous changes in the direction of reducing inputs $x$ and expanding outputs $y$.


Figure 2.2.7 Efficiency Improvement Possibility Function \& Decomposition

Figure 2.2.7 illustrates the principle of the EIP function, where the inefficient portfolio A is projected onto the efficient frontier at point B.

Also, W. Briec, K. Kerstens, And J. B. Lesourd (2004) defined an indirect mean-variance utility function for given parameters $(\rho, \mu)$, where $\rho$ is the weight in the utility function on expected return, and $\mu$ is the coefficient of risk.

$$
\begin{align*}
U^{*}(\mu, \rho)= & \sup \mu E(R(x))-\rho V(R(x)), \\
& A x \leq b  \tag{2.2.54}\\
& \sum_{i=1, \ldots, n} x_{i}=1, \quad x \geq 0
\end{align*}
$$

It determines the maximum value function for the decision maker for a given set of parameters $(\rho, \mu)$ which represents the investor's return preference and risk aversion. The overall efficiency (OE), allocative efficiency (AE), and portfolio efficiency (PE) are distinguished as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& O E(x, \rho, \mu)=\sup \left\{\delta ; \mu\left(E(R(x))+\delta g_{E}\right)-\rho\left(V(R(x))-\delta g_{V}\right) \leq U^{*}(\rho, \mu)\right\} \\
& A E(x, \rho, \mu)=O E(x, \rho, \mu)-S_{g}(x)  \tag{2.2.55}\\
& P E(x)=S_{g}(x)
\end{align*}
$$

Portfolio efficiency (PE) measures the distance needed for the point in evaluation to reach the portfolio frontier. Allocative efficiency (AE), however, measures the portfolio reallocation along the portfolio frontier, in order to achieve the maximum of the indirect mean-variance utility function. And the following relationship holds:

$$
\begin{equation*}
O E(x, \rho, \mu)=A E(x, \rho, \mu)+P E(x) \tag{2.2.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

According to the above definitions, a standard quadratic optimization method is computed:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\max & \delta, \\
\text { s.t. } & E\left(R\left(y^{k}\right)\right)+\delta g_{E} \leq \sum_{i=1, . . n} x_{i} E\left(R_{i}\right), \\
& V\left(R\left(y^{k}\right)\right)-\delta g_{V} \geq \sum_{i, j} \Omega_{i, j} x_{i} x_{j},  \tag{2.2.57}\\
& A x \leq b, \\
& \sum_{i=1, \ldots, n} x_{i} \quad x_{i} \geq 0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n .
\end{array}
$$

W. Briec, K. Kerstens and O. Jokung (2007) extended the W. Briec et al (2004) into a mean-variance-skewness space using cubic programming. They claimed that portfolio returns are generally not normally distributed as investors prefer positive skewness so that the probability of obtaining a negative return is low. This idea can be related to the Prospect Theory model of Kahneman and Tversky (1979) which underlies many of the recent developments in behavioural finance. The cubic utility function in the MVS space is as follows, where SK is a measure of skewness:

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{k, \mu, \rho}(x)=\mu E(R(x))-\rho V(R(x))+k S K(R(x)) \tag{2.2.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

And the indirect utility function is accordingly rewritten as:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max E(R(x))-\varphi V(R(x))+\Psi S K(R(x)) \\
& \text { s.t. } \quad \sum_{i=1, . . . n} x_{i}=1, \quad x \geq 0 \tag{2.2.59}
\end{align*}
$$

The cubic program is computed as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\max & \delta, \\
\text { s.t. } \quad & E\left(R\left(y^{k}\right)\right)+\delta g_{E} \leq \sum_{i=1, . . n} x_{i} E\left(R_{i}\right) \\
& V\left(R\left(y^{k}\right)\right)-\delta g_{V} \geq \sum_{i, j} \Omega_{i, j} x_{i} x_{j},  \tag{2.2.60}\\
& S k\left[R\left(y^{k}\right)\right]+\delta g_{S} \leq \sum_{i . j, k} C S K_{i, j, k} x_{i} x_{j} x_{k} \\
& \sum_{i=1, \ldots, n} x_{i} \quad x_{i} \geq 0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n .
\end{array}
$$

Similar to the model in MV space, this cubic program divides the overall efficiency into portfolio efficiency, allocative efficiency, and convexity efficiency. The portfolio efficiency is the distance from the point in evaluation to the boundary of the efficient frontier, and allocative efficiency is the necessary move along the efficient frontier in order to get the portfolio most preferred. Convexity efficiency measures the difference between the shortage functions computed on both the convex representation set $C R$ and the initial non-convex representation sex DR. (W. Briec et al (2007))

K Kerstens, A Mounir, and I V Woestyne (2010) examined different returns to scale, convexity problems and higher order moments in the quadratic and cubic optimization programming and argued that various return to scale (VRS), Free Disposal Hull and higher moments are desirable methodologies for the mutual funds evaluation.

## Chapter 3 A quadratic DEA model

### 3.1 Introduction and motivation

The key element in portfolio analysis is the emphasis on both expected return and risk. Thus investment fund managers attempt to find efficient portfolios -those promising the greatest expected return for any given degree of risk, i.e. risk-adjusted return. Consequently there is considerable interest in comparing the performance of investment fund management companies.

Morey and Morey (1999) developed a mutual funds efficiency measure in a traditional meanvariance model. It was based on Markowitz portfolio theory and related the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in mean-variance
space. The model is derived from the standard data envelopment analysis but differs from it in having non-linear constraints in the envelopment version of the model's structure. These constraints give rise to dual multipliers with economically important interpretations. Morey and Morey presented two basic programming approaches which have radial efficiency measures with both linear and quadratic constraints: mean return augmentation and risk contraction to identify those funds that are relatively efficient in the data envelopment analysis sense. Briec et al. (2009) and other authors further developed the model into a mean-variance-skewness space using cubic programming, as I showed in the preceding literature review.

As stated in the literature, two main methods have been used in mutual funds evaluation. One is portfolio evaluation, and the other is data envelopment analysis. The history of portfolio evaluation dates from the 1960s (Sharp, 1966; Treynor, 1965 and Jensen, 1968), with emphasis on both expected return and risk. Mutual fund managers attempt to find efficient portfolios - those promising the greatest expected return for any given degree of risk, i.e. risk-adjusted return. Murthi et at. (1997) were the first to apply DEA methodology to fund performance evaluation. A large proportion of DEA models applied to mutual funds show pieceswise linear correspondence between multiple inputs and outputs. Murthi et al. (1997) used standard deviation of returns, expense ratio, load and turnover as inputs, and mean gross return as output. Basso and Funari (2001) used several risk measures (standard deviation, standard semi-deviation and beta) and subscription and redemption costs as inputs, and the mean return and the percentage of periods in which the fund was non-dominated as outputs. Those linear DEA programs are good at handling multiple dimensions simultaneously and then yield a single real number performance. However, there is no evident rule for choosing between the various candidates of input and output variables and it is not always clear whether any given variable should be included in the model calculating the efficiency measure, or rather should be used to explain the observed variations in the efficiency measures in the second stage analysis. Also, those linear models show piecewise linear representation of inputs and outputs. However, according to Markowitz portfolio theory, there is correlation between different assets which should not be ignored, and these co-movements between different securities affect the relationship between expected return and risk of the combined portfolio.

Departing from linear models, Morey and Morey (1999) constructed a quadratic one-input, one-output DEA model. They used the fund's risks as outputs and mean returns as inputs. It was a quadratic model because it did not only contain linear constraints in the model, but also quadratic constraints. It utilized the insights from the traditional Markowitz portfolio theory that imperfect correlation between different assets leads to diversification of risk, and thus exploits the quadratic relationship between expected return and risk of the combined portfolio. Instead of having a piecewise frontier, as in linear DEA models, the efficient frontiers for Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic models are smooth concave curves in mean-variance space.

In the essence of data envelopment analysis, Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic models used the idea of 'funds of funds': for each fund there is a corresponding composite benchmarking fund, which lies on the efficient frontier. These are hypothetical but potentially efficient combinations of the actual observations. DEA scores are obtained by measuring the direct distance from the position of the fund in question in mean-variance space to that of the efficient composite benchmarking fund.

Although only mean and variance are considered in Morey and Morey (1999) models, they distinguish their model from traditional portfolio analysis by the fact that there is no theoretical benchmark like the market portfolio of the Capital Asset Pricing Model. Instead, the benchmarking fund in Morey and Morey (1999) consists of certain funds in the group, each with a particular weight. So rather than being compared with an idealised fund that requires information about all the equities in the market, Morey and Morey (1999) model benchmarks the funds under evaluation again themselves. This makes Morey and Morey (1999) model practically feasible and easier to test.

Chapter 3 is organized as follows: Section 2 provides a brief literature review of DEA models on fund performance evaluation; Section 3 describes in detail the Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model, Section 4 shows the data collection; and Section 5 presents the results.

### 3.2 Literature review

Data envelopment analysis is a methodology in operational research which gives completely different scenario from portfolio evaluation. It is a nonparametric analysis technique which
was proposed by Charnes et al. (1978), and it was firstly used in measurement of the performance of educational institutions. Murthi et at. (1997) were the first to apply this method to fund performance evaluation. As one of the linear models; they used standard deviation of returns, expense ratio, load and turnover as inputs, and mean gross return as output. Basso \& Funari (2001) used several risk measures (standard deviation, standard semideviation and beta) and subscription and redemption costs as inputs, and the mean return and the percentage of periods in which the fund was non-dominated as outputs. They also incorporate a stochastic dominance criterion as one of the outputs in their module. Sengupta (2003) employed loads, expenses, turnover, risk (standard deviation or beta) and skewness of returns as inputs and raw returns as output in his model. Daraio \& Simar (2006) used standard deviation, expense ratio, turnover and fund size as inputs and mean raw return as output. And their model was based on an order-m frontier. Lozano \& Gutierez (2008) incorporated second-order stochastic dominance in their models and used mean return as input and various measures of risk as outputs. Besides the variables of return, risk and transaction costs, Galagedera and Silvapulle (2002) include the minimum initial investment as an additional variable. Haslem and Scheraga (2006) include the percentage of stocks; Premachandra, Powell, and Shi (1998) add a variable indicating the total amount that is invested risk-free, etc.

Considering the drawbacks of the linear models, Morey and Morey (1999) developed quadratic data envelopment analysis models which followed the Markowitz portfolio theory and related the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in the mean-variance space. It is also constrained to avoid short sales. They presented two basic quadratic programming approaches to identify those funds that are efficient. Under this quadratic programming, only technical efficiency is being evaluated.

### 3.3 Methodology

This paper first of all applied Morey and Morey (1999) models to a recent dataset. Morey and Morey (1999) presented two basic quadratic programming approaches to identify those funds that are efficient. These two approaches are mean return augmentation and risk contraction. Figure 3.3.1 illustrates these two quadratic models.


Figure 3.3.1 Quadratic DEA efficiency frontier

As illustrated in Figure 3.3.1, it is in the mean-variance space with risk as input and mean return as output. These two approaches show different paths to the efficiency frontier. Mean return augmentation method could be seen as output oriented DEA, and it represents a vertical path towards the efficient frontier, while the risk contraction model is input-oriented DEA which follows the horizontal path.

Consider $N$ mutual funds to be evaluated, indexed $j=1,2, \ldots, N$, where $j_{0}$ is the fund in evaluation for each run. $j_{0}=1,2, \ldots N$, and there are $N$ runs totally. Let T denote the number of different time horizons, where $t=1,2, \ldots, T$. Denote $E\left(R_{j, t}\right)$ as the mean return for fund $j$, and $\sigma_{j}^{2}$ as its the variance as well as $\operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{j, t}\right)$ as its covariance. Denote ${ }^{w_{j}}$ as the weight allocated to each fund to form the benchmarking fund in each run. The formula for mean return augmentation is as follows:

Determine $w_{j} \geq 0\left(j=1,2, \ldots j_{0}, \ldots, N\right)$ so that:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \theta \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{j} w_{j}^{2} \sigma_{j, t}^{2}+\sum_{\substack{i=1 \\
i+j}}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{j, t}\right) \leq \sigma_{j_{0}}^{2}  \tag{3.3.1}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j, t}\right) \geq \vartheta E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right) \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

Where $\theta$ is the efficiency score and we have $\theta \geq 1$. It can be seen that this is an implementation of Markowitz portfolio analysis.
$\theta$ is calculated by running the above programming problem once for each fund. Efficient funds will have a value of one, while inefficient ones will get a value greater than one which shows how much the actual return should be expanded for the fund to be considered technically efficient. The efficiency score measured here is called 'technical efficiency' since it treats fund risk characteristics and costs as inputs in a simulation of the production of 'return' as an output. The measured efficiency scores relate to sampled funds and are relative in the sense of measuring the relative distance of each sample point to the efficient frontier of sample funds. They do not directly measure an abstract or theoretical efficiency. However, the purpose of the Monte Carlo bootstrapping analysis later in the thesis is to treat the measured scores as statistical estimators and to construct the sampling distributions of these estimators.

This model is a nonparametric technique, as weights ${ }^{w_{j}}$ are produced by the programming itself rather than set up beforehand. The first constraint is a convexity constraint; the second constraint maintains the risk level of the resulting composite fund obtained from this programming the same as that of the fund being evaluated, if not smaller; In the third constraint, because theta could only be equal or larger than 1 , this constraint guarantees that mean return of the resulting benchmarking fund is larger than or at least equal to that of the target fund. Note that constraints 2 and 3 hold for the all $T$ time horizons. So this programming has $2 T+1$ constraints totally. And the objective of this programming is to simultaneously maximize the increases in the mean returns over all these periods, without
occurrence of any increase in the risks. ${ }^{\theta}$ measures how many times the target fund must vertically expand in order to get the efficient frontier in this mean-variance space. Note that Figure 3.3.1 represents one of the $2 T+1$ periods, while for $T$ periods programming it has $T$ figures like this, and the resulting ${ }^{\theta}$ must satisfy the conditions in all $T$ periods. This paper involves three periods, a 3-year period, a 5-year period and a 10-year period. So $T=3$.

The second quadratic program is risk contraction, and the formula is as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Min } & Z \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j, t}\right) \geq E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right)  \tag{3.3.2}\\
& \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{J, t}\right) \leq Z \sigma_{j_{0, t}}^{2} \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

Where $Z \leq 1$ and the efficient frontier is composed by funds with $Z$ equal to one.

Similarly to the first approach, the first constraint is a convexity constraint; the second constraint then promises that the mean return of the efficient benchmarking fund maintains the same level as that of the fund being evaluated, if not larger; For the third constraint, since $Z$ is equal to or less than 1 , it requires that the efficient composite fund has smaller or at least the same risk level as that of the target fund. Again, constraints 2 and 3 hold for the all $T$ time horizons. The objective of this programming is to simultaneously minimize the contraction in the risk level over $T$ periods, without any decrease in the mean returns. As shown in Figure 3.3.1, $Z$ measures the minimum contraction the target fund needs in order to reach the efficient frontiers, considering all the conditions over $T$ periods.

### 3.4 Data collection

The database used is MorningStar Direct. The funds chosen were 'Acc' open ended funds. The 'Acc' distribution status means that dividends generated from these funds are automatically reinvested back to the funds. We examine one specific type of the open ended funds: those classified by Morningstar as 'UK mid-cap equity' as of July 1, 2011. This is because it has a fairly small number of funds which makes the analysis of the entire group easier. The choice of sample was based on considerations of homogeneity of the business of the underlying trusts. Another important criterion is that the funds we select must have at least 10 years of monthly return data available, because the models require mean returns for three periods: 3 years, 5 years and 10 years. Our sample period was from July 12011 to June 30 , 2011, so each fund selected had an inception date at or before July 1, 2001.

32 funds were found that satisfied the above criteria. For each fund, funds with negative mean monthly returns in any period were deleted, leaving 29 funds in the data set.

For each of the 29 mutual funds, the following figures were calculated for each of the 3, 5 and 10-year time periods: (i) Mean monthly returns; (ii) Covariances; (iii) Variances. These values were calculated using monthly return data from Morningstar Direct database. Expressed in percentage terms, Morningstar's calculation of monthly return is determined by taking the change in monthly net asset value, reinvesting all income and capital-gains distributions during that month, and dividing by the starting net asset value. The total returns account for management, administrative and other costs taken out of fund assets. Note that Morningstar does not adjust total returns for sales charges (such as front-end loads, deferred loads and redemption fees), preferring to give a clearer picture of a fund's performance.

The selected twenty-nine funds with their 3-year, 5 -year and 10 -year mean monthly returns are presented in Table 3.4.1

Table 3.4.1 Funds analysed and their mean monthly returns

| Fund No. and name | 3 Year mean <br> monthly <br> return | 5 Year mean <br> monthly <br> return | 10 <br> mean <br> monthly <br> return |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 1.33 | 0.53 | 0.60 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 0.56 | 0.59 | 0.60 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 0.63 | 0.66 | 0.67 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 1.02 | 0.72 | 0.77 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 0.84 | 0.57 | 0.82 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 0.47 | 0.37 | 0.36 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 0.54 | 0.43 | 0.42 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 0.42 | 0.41 | 0.44 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 0.44 | 0.43 | 0.46 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1.03 | 0.82 | 0.83 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 0.86 | 0.44 | 0.48 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 0.56 | 0.22 | 0.36 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 0.46 | 0.28 | 0.56 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 0.84 | 0.44 | 0.65 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 0.89 | 0.45 | 0.70 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 1.14 | 0.63 | 0.63 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 1.18 | 0.74 | 0.83 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 0.59 | 0.44 | 0.63 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 0.56 | 0.44 | 0.64 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 1.22 | 0.63 | 0.84 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 0.11 | 0.24 | 0.67 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 0.16 | 0.29 | 0.72 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 0.84 | 0.44 | 0.92 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 1.66 | 1.10 | 0.80 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 1.60 | 1.04 | 0.83 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 0.80 | 0.55 | 0.60 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 0.73 | 0.48 | 0.55 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1.42 | 0.90 | 0.96 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 0.83 | 0.90 |  |
|  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |

### 3.5 Results analysis

Efficiency scores are calculated only with respect to the sample units. Note that MoreyMorey routines were validated on Morey-Morey's own data. For each of the 29 funds, we ran both mean return augmentation and risk contraction programming, and the results are listed as in table 3.5.1. Recall that the return augmentation programme records efficiency of performance as $\geq 1$, with fully efficient performance shown as a score of 1 , while the risk reduction programme records efficiency of performance as $\leq 1$, with fully efficient performance shown as a score of 1 .

Table 3.5.1 (a ) Frontier values from the mean return augmentation programming

| Fund No. and name | Frontier mean returns |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 3 Year | 5 Year | 10 Year |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 1.35 | 0.6468 | 0.6991 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 0.8471 | 0.6788 | 0.7826 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 0.8489 | 0.6803 | 0.7831 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 1.1586 | 0.8178 | 0.8746 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 0.84 | 0.57 | 0.82 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 0.8752 | 0.689 | 0.7943 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 0.8735 | 0.6843 | 0.7868 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 0.9188 | 0.7375 | 0.7999 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 0.9182 | 0.737 | 0.7998 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1.03 | 0.82 | 0.83 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 0.956 | 0.4942 | 0.6265 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 1.0825 | 0.5582 | 0.7086 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 0.46 | 0.28 | 0.56 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 0.8702 | 0.4735 | 0.6892 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 1.0173 | 0.5797 | 0.8001 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 1.4287 | 0.8368 | 0.804 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 1.2191 | 0.7645 | 0.8575 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 1.1007 | 0.7242 | 0.8313 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 1.0204 | 0.6148 | 0.8943 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 1.2238 | 0.6884 | 0.8426 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 0.8628 | 0.4858 | 0.8888 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 0.8628 | 0.4858 | 0.8887 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 0.84 | 0.44 | 0.92 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 1.66 | 1.1 | 0.8 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 1.601 | 1.0462 | 0.8305 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 1.151 | 0.7913 | 0.8632 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 1.1495 | 0.7559 | 0.8661 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1.42 | 0.9 | 0.96 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 1.43 | 0.9083 | 0.9533 |

Table 3.5.1 (b ) DEA scores from the mean return augmentation programming

| Fund No. and name | DEA scores |
| :--- | :--- |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 1.015 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 1.1505 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 1.0308 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 1.1359 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 1 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 1.8621 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 1.5914 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 1.7987 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 1.714 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 1.1116 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 1.9331 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 1 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 1.036 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 1.143 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 1.2532 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 1.0331 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 1.3196 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 1.3974 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 1.0031 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 1.3265 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 1.2344 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 1 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 1 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 1.0006 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 1.4387 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 1.5747 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 1.0593 |
|  |  |

Table 3.5.2 (a ) Frontier values from the risk contraction programming

| Fund No. and name |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | Frontier variance |  |  |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 41.7244 | 32.5916 | 26.8937 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 26.2296 | 20.6322 | 20.9228 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 28.5375 | 22.1238 | 22.108 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 31.9833 | 24.7411 | 21.5681 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 25.4702 | 20.234 | 22.9294 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 23.2782 | 18.7204 | 18.1069 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 23.6344 | 18.9101 | 18.2147 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 23.4662 | 18.7967 | 17.9295 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 23.742 | 18.9806 | 18.0692 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 36.6318 | 27.8395 | 23.7489 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 26.3676 | 21.0007 | 18.0637 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 23.7016 | 18.9708 | 16.2692 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 24.8915 | 19.832 | 14.9057 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 23.2325 | 18.8981 | 21.5468 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 24.0626 | 19.5407 | 20.1135 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 36.1744 | 28.0543 | 21.7694 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 37.9648 | 29.4226 | 23.0613 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 26.9454 | 20.9756 | 16.6189 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 27.0885 | 21.0694 | 16.5898 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 40.5012 | 32.2574 | 24.7067 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 25.1772 | 19.9353 | 16.7109 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 26.8616 | 21.1923 | 17.8542 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 58.5356 | 43.2719 | 33.049 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 79.6227 | 55.9455 | 37.1673 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 79.1058 | 55.7109 | 36.8609 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 29.5848 | 22.7898 | 18.0845 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 28.229 | 21.8734 | 17.0729 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 103.6475 | 72.8428 | 48.6614 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 68.9601 | 49.9436 | 34.5464 |
|  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |

Table 3.5.2 (b) DEA scores from the risk contraction programming

| Fund No. and name | DEA scores |
| :--- | :--- |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 0.9596 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 0.9005 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 0.9698 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 0.6503 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 1 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 0.8141 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 0.8266 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 0.7536 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 0.7614 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 0.9467 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 0.7693 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 1 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 0.9926 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 0.8532 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 0.7876 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 0.8456 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 0.5565 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 0.55 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 0.9813 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 0.586 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 0.6242 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 1 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 1 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 0.996 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 0.6736 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 0.6365 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 0.7167 |
|  |  |

Table 3.5.1 and table 3.5.2 show that for both mean return augmentation and risk contraction, the 5th fund Artemis UK Special Situations, the $10^{\text {th }}$ fund BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc, the 13th fund F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc, the $23^{\text {rd }}$ fund Schroder UK Mid 250

Acc, the $24^{\text {th }}$ fund Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc and the 28th fund SVM UK Opportunities Instl have the efficiency score of 1, which means they are most efficient funds among these 28 funds in both approaches. To illustrate more, look at one fund, the 4th fund, particularly. The efficiency score is $\theta=1.1359$ in the mean return augmentation approach, and in the risk contraction approach, the efficiency score is $z=0.6503$.Table 4 shows the actual mean monthly returns and frontier mean returns for the 4th fund Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A , as long as the actual monthly variance and frontier variance. We could see that the frontier mean returns (the mean returns for the composite benchmarking fund) expand the actual mean returns by $13.59 \%$ for each period. And the frontier variance (the variance for the composite benchmarking variance) contracted the actual monthly variance by more than one third. Note that the actual monthly variances times efficiency scores are much larger than the frontier variance for 3-year period and slightly larger for 5-year period 10-year period, which means that the third constraint in (3.1.2) is not strictly binding. In this case the frontier variances contract even more than the efficiency score indicates. Note that there is duplication among the sample of unit trusts; eg. Marlborough A and B units are claims on the same fund but one is available at lower charge to a minimum investment of $£ 25,000$ and the other for a minimum of $£ 1000$. There are several other example of institutional and retail units in the same fund. Therefore, it is not surprisingly the correlation coefficient between each pairs of such funds=1.

Mean return augmentation method could be seen as output oriented DEA, and it represents a vertical path towards the efficient frontier, and the frontier mean returns from augmentation approach are the mean returns of the hypothetical funds lying on the efficient frontier at the end of the vertical path from the inefficient funds. The relationship between the frontier mean returns and portmanteau DEA scores is that frontier mean returns equal to actual mean monthly returns times efficiency scores. Risk contraction model is input-oriented DEA which follows the horizontal path to the efficient frotier. And the frontier variances from risk contraction approach are the variances of the hypothetical funds lying on the efficient frontier at the end of the horizontal path from the inefficient funds. The relationship between the frontier variances and portmanteau DEA scores is that frontier variances equal to actual monthly variances times efficiency scores.

Table 3.5.3 Comparison of frontier and actual levels of returns and risks for Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A fund

|  | 3 -year | 5-year | 10 -year |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Actual mean monthly returns | 1.02 | 0.72 | 0.77 |
| Frontier mean returns | 1.1586 | 0.8178 | 0.8746 |
| Actual mean monthly returns <br> *efficiency scores $(\theta=1.1359)$ | 1.1586 | 0.8178 | 0.8746 |
| Actual monthly variances | 53.5373 | 38.0468 | 33.1930 |
| Frontier variances | 31.9833 | 24.7411 | 21.5681 |
| Actual monthly variances *efficiency <br> scores $(z=0.6503)$ | 34.8151 | 24.7418 | 21.5854 |

For the $4^{\text {th }}$ fund, in the mean return augmentation approach, the composite benchmarking fund consists of five other funds, with each having a particular weight: w5=0.0709 (5th fund Artemis UK Special Situations); w10 $=0.5308$ (10th fund BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc); w20 $=0.052$ (20th fund MFM Bowland); w23=0.0049 (23rd fund Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc) and w28=0.3414(28th fund SVM UK Opportunities Instl). So the weights of all other funds equal to the zero. The second approach, risk contraction results a different set of weights for the corresponding composite benchmarking fund w5 $=0.1106$ (5th fund Artemis UK Special Situations); w10 $=0.6162$ (10th fund BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc); w14=0.1076 (14th fund GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities) and w20=0.1656 (20th fund MFM Bowland) with all other w's at the zero level.

Morey and Morey (1999) also described an approach to further discriminate the 6 most efficient funds. The idea is that for those funds with $\theta=1$ there could still be a 'slack' or possible improvement in the mean returns for at least one of its horizons. Because the efficient frontier illustrated in Figure 3.3.1 represents the situation in one period, for three periods there are three frontiers. The two quadratic programming problems described in (3.1.1) and (3.1.2) simultaneously consider the constraints over all three periods, however for those funds with $\theta=1$, if the fund was not on the frontiers for all periods, a 'slack' would be detected. In this approach the new objective is to maximize the mean return for only the most important period, that is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Max} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j}, \tau\right) \tag{3.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

With all the constraints remaining the same.
Here $\tau$ is the time period in consideration.

According to the order of importance in the mutual fund industry 10-year period is the most meaningful time horizon, followed by 5 -year and 3-year period. So let ${ }^{\tau=t_{10}}$ first, then if the return of the benchmarking fund cannot be further maximised, then let $\tau=t_{5}$ and $\tau=t_{3}$ successively.

For the risk contraction approach, the new objective is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Min} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, \tau}, R_{J, \tau}\right) \tag{3.5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Executing the above procedures no further improvement in either expected return or risk was found. Also a further look at the results from programming (3.3.1) and (3.3.2) we found that for those funds the frontier mean returns and variances are equal to their actual mean returns and variances, which mean that they are on the frontier for all three periods therefore no further improvements are possible. So these six efficient funds are 'tied'.

Table 3.5.4 Rankings of funds from two approaches

| Fund No. And Name | Ranking from mean return | Ranking from risk |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 9 | 11 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 17 | 13 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 10 | 10 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 15 | 24 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 1 | 1 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 28 | 17 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 25 | 16 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 27 | 21 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 26 | 20 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A | 1 | 1 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 14 | 12 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 29 | 19 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 1 | 1 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK | 12 | 8 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 16 | 14 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 19 | 18 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 11 | 15 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A | 20 | 28 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B | 22 | 29 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 8 | 9 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 21 | 27 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 18 | 26 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 1 | 1 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst | 1 | 1 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R | 7 | 7 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 23 | 23 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 24 | 25 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1 | 1 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 13 | 22 |

Table 3.5.4 lists the rankings of funds from two approaches. We could see that except the most efficient funds, only fund 3,25 and 26 have the same ranking, with other funds rank either slightly or dramatically differently for different approaches. The correlation between
two rankings is 0.8299 , which is very high. This means that although mean return augmentation approach and risk contraction approach emphasize different aspects and have different benchmarking fund on the efficient frontier, a fund could get similar ranking based on the two approaches. Also, the correlation between the DEA score from the mean return augmentation approach and Sharpe measure is 0.8535 and the correlation between the DEA score from risk contraction approach is 0.8156 . This indicates that DEA scores share similar results with Sharpe ratio.

The non-linear programming Eqs. (3.3.1) can also be solved by maximizing the following function, which is the lagrangean function for this problem:

$$
\Phi=\theta+\sum_{t=1}^{t=T} \lambda_{t}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{j=n}\left(w_{j t} E R_{j t}\right)-\theta E R_{0 t}\right]+\sum_{t=1}^{t=T} \alpha_{t}\left[\sigma_{0 t}^{2}-\sum_{j=1}^{j=n} \sum_{k=1}^{k=n} w_{j} w_{k}\left(\operatorname{cov}\left(R_{j t} R_{j t}\right)\right)\right]+\lambda\left[\sum_{j=1}^{j=n} w_{j}-1\right]
$$

Take the derivative, $\partial \Phi / \partial \theta=0$, the following relationship could be obtained:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum \lambda_{t}^{*} E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right)=1 \tag{3.5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, formulation of Eqs. (3.3.2) could be solved by maximising the following function:
$-\Phi^{\prime}=-Z+\sum_{t=1}^{t=T} \mu_{t}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{j=n}\left(w_{j t} E R_{j t}\right)-E R_{0 t}\right]+\sum_{t=1}^{t=T} u_{t}\left[Z \sigma_{0 t}^{2}-\sum_{j=1}^{j=n} \sum_{k=1}^{k=n} w_{j} w_{k}\left(\operatorname{cov}\left(R_{j t} R_{j t}\right)\right)\right]+v\left[\sum_{j=1}^{j=n} w_{j}-1\right]$

Take the derivative, $\quad \partial \Phi / \partial Z=0$, one could get:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum u_{t}^{*} \sigma_{j_{0}, t}=1 \tag{3.5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\lambda_{t}^{*}$ and ${ }^{u_{t}^{*}}$, are called 'virtual weights'. They are useful in exploring the marginal contribution of the mean reuturn and variance in each period to the fund's efficiency. Table 3.5.5 presents the Lagrangians for the 29 funds.

Table 3.5.5 Lagrangians for the 29 funds

| Fund number | Approaches | Type of return | 3 years | 5 years | 10 years |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.7519 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0084 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 1.9807 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0230 | 0 | 0 |
| 2 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0000 | 1.6949 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0381 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.6758 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0265 | 0.0179 |
| 3 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.5152 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0339 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.4503 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
| 4 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1206 | 1.1590 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
| 5 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.6519 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0073 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 1.8803 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0230 | 0 |
| 6 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0000 | 1.6643 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0169 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4758 | 0 | 1.965 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0265 | 0 |
| 7 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.5152 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0375 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.6503 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0390 | 0 | 0 |
| 8 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1206 | 1.1640 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |


| 9 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0 | 0.7553 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0035 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.6574 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0350 | 0 | 0 |
| 10 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0000 | 0 | 1.6593 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0381 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.6758 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0265 | 0.0169 |
| 11 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.5152 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0339 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.4503 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
| 12 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1206 | 1.065 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
| 13 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0339 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.4503 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.8759 | 1.007 |
| 14 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
| 15 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0753 | 0.1706 | 1.1640 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
| 16 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0381 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.6758 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0265 | 0.0169 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.5152 | 0 |
| 17 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0339 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.4503 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |


|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1204 | 1.785 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 18 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0339 | 0 | 0 |
| 19 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.4503 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1206 | 1.4670 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
| 20 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0 | 0.6142 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.1206 | 1.356 |
| 21 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0245 | 0.1206 | 1.4530 |
| 22 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4200 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
| 23 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0456 | 0.1206 | 1.4576 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.6785 | 0.6142 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0263 | 0 |
| 24 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4563 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 1.3452 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0340 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.1206 | 1.3456 |
| 25 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.3462 | 0.7895 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0843 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.2345 | 0 | 0 |
| 26 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0 | 1.5673 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0043 | 0 |


|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4467 | 0 | 0 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4563 | 0 | 0 |
| 27 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0165 | 0.7854 | 1.2570 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.4768 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0.3452 | 0.8432 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0974 | 0 |
| 28 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0.4568 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0343 | 0.7543 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0234 | 0 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0.0234 | 0.0123 | 0 |
| 29 | Mean return augmentation | $\lambda_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0456 | 0 |
|  |  | $\alpha_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.0239 | 0 |
|  | Risk contraction | $\mu_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0 | 0.6943 |
|  |  | $u_{t}^{*}$ | 0 | 0.5427 | 0 |

For the first fund, the Lagrangian on the 3 year mean return is $\lambda_{1}^{*}=0.7519$, which indicates that if the fund's actual 3 year mean return were decreased 0.1 unit to 1.43 (from 1.33), the DEA score of the fund would be worsened by 0.7519 units, which becomes $1.015+0.7519=1.7669$. To test $(5.4), 0.7519(1.33)+0(0.53)+0(0.60)=1$. And for (5.5), there is $0.0230(43.47992)+0(34.91566)+0(31.23086)=1$.

These 'virtual weights' could also be used to look at substitution possibilities. For example, for the fourth fund, taking the ratio of the Lagrangians for the 3 year mean return and the 5 year mean return (devided 0.1206 by 0.0165 , or 7.3 ), means that one could exchange a 0.1 increase in the 5 year return (from 0.72 to 0.82 ) with a 0.73 decrease in the fund's 3 year mean return (i.e. from 1.02 to 0.29 ), all with no change in the fund's overall rating of 1.1359 . This is also true when analysing the substitution of risks.

### 3.6 Conclusion

The quadratic DEA model presented in Morey and Morey (1999) departs from the traditional DEA models and utilises insights from Markowitz portfolio theory which reveals the quadratic relationship between fund's return and risk. This application applies the procedures
to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds and identifies six efficient funds among 29 funds.

Morey and Morey (1999) laid a foundation for further development of quadratic and cubic DEA models. Briec et al. (2004) applied a directional distance function which allowed simultaneous changes in the direction of reducing inputs and expanding outputs. They also defined an indirect mean-variance utility function, and divided overall efficiency (OE) into allocative efficiency (AE), and portfolio efficiency (PE). Briec et al. (2007) claimed that portfolio returns are generally not normally distributed, with investors preferring positive skewness so that the probability of obtaining a negative return is low. They extended the work of Briec et al. (2004) into mean-variance-skewness space using cubic programming and divided overall efficiency into portfolio efficiency, allocative efficiency, and convexity efficiency. Kerstens et al. (2011) examined different returns to scale, convexity problems and higher order moments in both quadratic and cubic optimization programming and decided that various return to scale (VRS), free disposal hull and higher moments are essential methodologies for mutual funds evaluation. Relevant empirical papers applying these methods are very few, and none of these papers discuss the statistical properties of DEA estimators. However, as our empirical example shows, ignoring the uncertainty surrounding DEA estimates can lead to erroneous conclusions.

## Chapter 4 Bootstrapping of the DEA scores

### 4.1 Introduction and motivation

Data Envelopment Analysis has been proved to be a powerful frontier methodology to estimate production efficiency in a nonparametric framework. However, this methodology has to be used carefully; one major reason is that DEA estimators have unknown asymptotic sampling distributions. Banker (1993), Kneip et al. (1996), Korostelev et al. (1995a, 1995b), Gijbels et al (1999) have investigated the consistency and convergence properties of the DEA scores and found that the efficiency scores only converge when the sample size is large enough. They are also very sensitive to outliers and extreme values, for example, dropping one outlier can dramatically change the efficiency level for other decision making units. Thus the DEA estimators have shown to be biased when using a finite number of observed units.

Simar and Wilson (1992) claimed that the DEA results by themselves are not true efficiency scores, and the true efficiency scores cannot be known. The only way to obtain some information of the unknown true levels of efficiency is through the analysis of the distributions of the samples. For example, the confidence intervals can give insights about how reliable the DEA scores obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic models are, whether they're just random results or statistically significant. And it's also necessary to correct the bias of the DEA scores to give more accurate estimation of the investment fund's performance. A very effective way to investigate sampling properties of DEA estimators is to use a methodology called bootstrapping, i.e. sampling with replacement in order to simulate sampling distributions. In addition, the DEA estimators can be improved using bias correction in the bootstrap.

The second application of this thesis is to extend the Morey and Morey (1999) paper by utilizing Simar-Wilson (2008) bootstrapping algorithms to develop statistical inference and confidence intervals for the indexes of efficient investment fund performance.

Chapter 4 is organized as follows: Section 2 provides a literature review and methodology of bootstrap; Section 3 describes the algorithm of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model; Section 4 shows the data collection; and Section 5 presents the results.

### 4.2 Literature review and methodology

The bootstrap was introduced by Efron (1979) and it has been widely used to analyze the distribution of a statistic, for instance, mean and variance, without using normal theory such as z -statistic and t -statistic. This is convenient when the distribution of a certain statistic is uncertain. The first use of the bootstrap in frontier models was Simar (1992) and it was later developed by Simar and Wilson (1998a) etc.

The essence of the bootstrap idea (Efron, 1979, 1982; Efron and Tibshirani, 1993) is that distribution of the true efficiency scores which is unknown could approximate to the sampling distribution, given that a proper data generating process (DGP) is used to create resamples. Therefore, in bootstrap, through obtaining the sampling distribution which can be calculated following a certain procedure, the information of the true efficiency scores is revealed. The
crucial step is to create a DGP to simulate, or mimic, the real unknown DGP from which the true DEA estimators are generated.

There are two general ways to resample. The first one is called Monte Carlo resampling. The first step in this resampling is to draw a new set of data independently, uniformly, and with replacement from the set of original observations. Under the Monte Carlo resampling, all the resamples are drawn only from the original data, and the size of the resample is equal to the size of the original data set. Therefore there could be some duplicates since the replacement comes from random picking from the original data. In the second step, a new efficiency score is computed from the resample in the first step. The first two steps then are repeated as many times as needed to get a precise estimate of the distribution of the true DEA scores. A more complicated way to resample is the 'exact' version of resampling. The procedure is similar, but all possible resample of the data sets are enumerated exhaustively. In a case where data size is n , there are $\binom{2 n-1}{n}$ different resamples totally.

The DGP described in this application is based on Monte Carlo resampling. To illustrate the DGP and resampling procedure (in an input-oriented DEA case):

In a DEA application, the true attainable set $\Psi$, therefore the true efficiency score $\theta$ are unknown, and we use the observations of input and output to capture some characteristics of these unknown variables.

Denote X as the observed dataset including both inputs and outputs,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{X}=\left\{\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\} \tag{4.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Denote P (which is unknown) as the DGP which generates X .

$$
\begin{equation*}
P=P(\Psi, f(x, y)) \tag{4.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Psi$ is unknown, and $f(x, y)$ is the probability density function of the random variables $(x, y)$ in X .

Let $\hat{P}$ be a consistent estimator of $P$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\mathrm{P}}=\mathrm{P}(\hat{\Psi}, \hat{f}(x, y)) \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Psi}=\left\{(x, y) \in R^{p+q} \mid y \leq \sum_{i=1}^{n} \gamma_{i} y_{i} ; x \geq \sum_{i=1}^{n} \gamma_{i} x_{i} ; \gamma_{i} \geq 0 ; i=1, \ldots, n\right\} \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore $\widehat{\Psi}$ is the piecewise linear representation of the technology or attainable set. The observed X are used to construct estimates $\hat{\theta}_{i}$, and $\hat{\theta}_{i}$ are the efficiency scores of the production units $\left(x_{\mathrm{i}}, y_{\mathrm{i}}\right)$ obtained by following DEA procedures. In a simple case of constant return to scale and input oriented DEA, there is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\theta}_{i}=\min \left\{\theta_{i} \mid y_{i} \leq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \gamma_{j} y_{j} ; \theta x_{i} \geq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \gamma_{j} x_{j} ; \sum_{i=1}^{n} \gamma_{i}=1 ; \theta>0 ; \gamma_{i} \geq 0 ; j=1, \ldots, n\right\}, i=1, \ldots, n \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then a new dataset, which includes all the resamples, $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}^{*}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ needs to be generated from $\hat{P}$. In the bootstrap of input-oriented DEA, the resamples are composed of new inputs and the original outputs in which case $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ while in the bootstrap of output-oriented DEA the resamples include the original inputs and new outputs where $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}, y_{i}^{*}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ And the procedures to create $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ in this input-oriented case are as follows:

First of all, select $\theta_{i}^{*} i=1, \ldots, n$ from $\hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}$ randomly.

Then for a given output level $y_{i}$, the efficient level of input is determined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{i}^{\partial}\left(y_{i}\right)=\hat{\theta}_{i}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) x_{i} \cdot i=1, \ldots \mathrm{n} . \tag{4.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Which lies on the efficient boundary $\partial \hat{\Psi}$, along the ray x and orthogonal to y .

And for each replicate $\theta_{i}^{*}$, there must be a corresponding input which could be projected on the same point on the efficient frontier by $\theta_{i}^{*}$ given the same $y_{i}$. This is illustrated by the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{i}^{\partial}\left(y_{i}\right)=\theta_{i}^{*}\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}\right) x_{i}^{*} \tag{4.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.2.6) and (4.2.7), the bootstrap inputs are obtained by the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{i}^{*}=\frac{x_{i}^{\partial}\left(y_{i}\right)}{\theta_{i}^{*}}=\frac{\hat{\theta}_{i}}{\theta_{i}^{*}} x_{i} \cdot i=1, \ldots \mathrm{n} . \tag{4.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Once $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ is obtained, $\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ is then computed by solving the following linear program, in this simple case of constant return to scale.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\theta_{i}^{*}}=\min \left\{\theta \mid y_{\mathrm{i}} \leq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \gamma_{j} y_{j} ; \theta x_{\mathrm{i}} \geq \sum_{j=1}^{n} \gamma_{j} x_{j}^{*} ; \sum_{j=1}^{n} \gamma_{j}=1 ; \theta>0 ; \quad \gamma_{j} \geq 0, j=1, \ldots, n\right\}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ is an estimator of $\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ under DGP $\hat{\mathrm{P}}$. It is in the same way as $\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ is an estimator of the true efficiency score $\vartheta_{\mathrm{i}}$, given the unknown true DGP P.

The above procedures show how the computed sampling distributions mimic the original unknown distributions of efficiency estimators, and it could be written as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{\theta_{i}^{*}}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)\left|\hat{\mathrm{P}} \sim\left(\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}-\theta_{\mathrm{i}}\right)\right| P \tag{4.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

To summarize, the bootstrapping is based on the idea of repeatedly simulating the data generating process (DGP) to obtain resamples, and then calculate the distribution of the resamples which mimic the distribution of the unknown true efficiency estimator. It involves mainly three steps:

1. Apply the DGP $\hat{\mathrm{P}}$ to generate resamples $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}^{*}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ (i.e., simulate).
2. Use the resamples $\mathrm{X}^{*}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{*}, y_{i}^{*}\right), i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$ to compute ${\hat{\theta_{i}^{*}}}^{*}$, which is the estimator of the efficiency score $\hat{\theta}_{\text {i }}$
3. Repeat the first two steps.

The distribution of the estimates obtained in the end approximates the distribution of the true efficiency estimator.

In the bootstrapping, the quality of the approximation relies partly on the number of times the simulation repeated. (indicate it as B). It is proved that the larger value of B the better. Simar and Wilson (2000) claimed that when B $\rightarrow \infty$, the error of this approximation due to DGP $\hat{\mathrm{p}}$ tends to be zero. To illustrate, DGP $\hat{\bar{P}}$ generates B samples $X_{b}^{*}, b=1, \ldots B$. In particular, for a given unit $\left(X_{i}, Y_{i}\right)$, there is $\left\{\hat{\theta_{i b}^{*}}\right\}_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}}$; therefore the distribution of $\left\{\hat{\theta_{\mathrm{ib}}^{*}}\right\}_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}}$ is the approximation of the distribution of the true efficiency scores.

Bootstrap is applied to correct the bias of the efficiency estimator and construct corresponding hypothesis tests.
(i) Correcting the bias

The bias of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$ as the estimator of true efficiency score $\theta$ is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{bias}_{i}=E\left(\hat{\theta}_{i}\right)-\theta_{i}, \tag{4.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

The bias of $\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ as the estimator of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$ is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{bias}_{i}=E\left(\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}\right)-\hat{\theta}_{i} . \tag{4.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

The latter can also be written as the following given B replications in the bootstrap,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{bias}_{i}=\frac{1}{\mathrm{~B}} \sum_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}} \hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{~b}}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{k}} \cdot=\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}} . \tag{4.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to (4.2.8), the following relationship holds,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{bias}_{i}=\operatorname{bias}_{i}=\hat{\operatorname{bias}_{i}}=\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}} . \tag{4.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ as a bias-corrected estimator of $\theta_{\mathrm{i}}$, there is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}=\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}-\hat{\mathrm{bias}}_{\mathrm{i}} .=2 \hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}-\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} . \tag{4.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\widetilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{b}}^{*}$ as a bias-corrected estimator of $\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{b}}^{*}$, there is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{~b}}^{*}=\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{~b}}^{*}-2 \hat{\mathrm{bias}_{i}} \tag{4.2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{b}}^{*}$ has to be shifted by $2 \hat{\text { bias }}_{\mathrm{i}}$ to the left in order to centre on bias-corrected estimator of $\theta_{\mathrm{i}}, \tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$.

Finally, the sample variance of the bootstrap values $\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ could be estimated by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}=\frac{1}{\mathrm{~B}} \sum_{b=1}^{B}\left[\left(\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{~b}}^{*}-\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}\right)\right]^{2} \tag{4.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, this bias correction has shown to introduce additional noise (Efron and Tibshirani, 1993); the mean square error of the bias-corrected estimator $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ maybe greater than the mean square error of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$. The value of variance of $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ is approximately $4 \hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$. Therefore, the bias correction should not be used unless $4 \hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ is well less than $\left[\text { bias }_{i}\right]^{2}$; otherwise, $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}$ is likely to have mean square error larger than the mean square error of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$. Efron and Tibshirani (1993) proved that the bias correction in (4.2.13) should be avoided unless

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mid \text { bias }_{i} \mid}{\hat{\sigma}_{i}}>\frac{1}{4} \tag{4.2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

## (ii) Confidence interval

Bootstrapping allows one to calculate the confidence intervals for the true efficiency score $\theta_{\mathrm{i}}$. The formula for confidence interval of $\hat{\theta}_{i, b}^{*}, b=1, \ldots, B$, at $\alpha$ significance level is as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Pr}\left(-\hat{\mathrm{b}}_{\alpha} \leq \hat{\theta}_{D E A}^{*}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)-\hat{\theta}_{D E A}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \leq-\hat{\alpha}_{\alpha} \mid \hat{P}\left(x_{n}\right)\right)=1-\alpha \tag{4.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similar to (4.2.17), the formula for confidence interval of $\hat{\theta}_{i, b}^{*}, b=1, \ldots, B$, at $\alpha$ significance level is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Pr}\left(-\mathrm{b}_{\alpha} \leq \hat{\theta}_{D E A}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)-\theta\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \leq-\alpha_{\alpha}\right)=1-\alpha . \tag{4.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to (4.2.8), (4.2.17) could be rewritten as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Pr}\left(-\hat{\mathrm{b}}_{\alpha} \leq \hat{\theta}_{D E A}\left(x_{\mathrm{i}}, y_{\mathrm{i}}\right)-\theta\left(x_{\mathrm{i}}, y_{\mathrm{i}}\right) \leq-\hat{\alpha}_{\alpha}\right)=1-\alpha . \tag{4.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $(1-\alpha) \%$ confidence interval, $\hat{a}_{\alpha}$ and $\hat{b}_{\alpha}$ can be found by sorting the values $\left(\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{i}\right), b=1, \ldots, B$ in increasing order and then delete $\left(\frac{\alpha}{2} \times 100\right)$-percent of the elements at either end of the sorted list. Then set $-\hat{b}_{\alpha}$ and $-\hat{a}_{\alpha}$ equal to the endpoints of the truncated, making sure $\hat{a}_{\alpha} \leq \hat{b}_{\alpha}$.

Then the $(1-\alpha)$-percent confidence interval for the true efficiency score is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)+\hat{\alpha}_{\alpha} \leq \theta\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \leq \hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)+\hat{b}_{\alpha} \tag{4.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

If bias-corrected estimators are considered, then $\hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$ would be replaced by $\tilde{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$ in (4.2.22).

The above is standard bootstrap, which is also called 'naïve' bootstrap. Silverman and Young (1987) and Efron and Tibshirani (1993) claimed that standard bootstrap has some problems. In the standard bootstrap, the true DEA scores are subject to an unknown distribution, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{n}\right) \sim \text { i.i.d. } F \tag{4.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F$ is an unknown density function on $(0,1]$. Define $\hat{F}$ as the estimator of $F$, there is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}\right) \sim \text { i.i.d. } \hat{F} \tag{4.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because with limited data, $\hat{F}$ is actually a discrete distribution, therefore samples constructed from $\hat{F}$ may have some peculiar properties. Most seriously, it's not consistent under some circumstances which mean (4.2.8) doesn't hold all the time. In other words, the distribution of the $\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ will not approximate the sampling distribution of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$. Because $\hat{\mathrm{F}}$ provides a poor estimate of $F$ near the upper bound for $\theta$ (when $\theta=1$ ). Also, it is difficult to estimate $F$ from $\hat{F}$ in the extreme tails.

There are two techniques to deal with this problem, one is subsampling technique (in which the sample size equals $m=n^{k}$, for $0<k<1$ ), and the other is smoothing technique. Kneip et al. (2003) proved that both ideas provide consistent results in the simulation. The following part of this sector describes the smoothing technique.

Smoothed bootstrap is introduced and developed by Efron (1979, 1982). The essential idea of the smoothed bootstrap is to resample not assuming $\hat{F}$, but a smoothed version of $\hat{F}$ which is a joint density function. Defined it as $\hat{F}_{h}(t)$, (4.2.21) in the standard bootstrap is then replaced by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{n}\right) \sim \text { i.i.d } d \hat{F}_{h}(t) \tag{4.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the smoothed bootstrap, kernel density estimation is chosen as the joint density function $\hat{F}_{h}(t)$. Kernel density estimation is a non-parametric way of estimating the probability density function of a random variable. It provides a smoothing function through a parameter, particularly when data sample is finite.

To illustrate, the kernel density estimator is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\mathrm{f}}_{\mathrm{h}}(\mathrm{x})=\frac{1}{\mathrm{n}} \sum_{\mathrm{i}=1}^{\mathrm{n}} \mathrm{~K}_{\mathrm{h}}\left(\mathrm{x}-\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)=\frac{1}{\mathrm{nh}} \sum_{\mathrm{i}=1}^{\mathrm{n}} \mathrm{~K}\left(\frac{\mathrm{x}-\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}}}{\mathrm{~h}}\right) \tag{4.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $K(\cdot)$ is a symmetric but not necessarily positive function that integrates to one, which means $K(\cdot)$ satisfies $K(t)=K(-t), \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} K(t) d t=1$, and $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} t K(t) d t=0$. Any symmetric probability function with mean zero satisfies these conditions. $\hat{\mathrm{f}}_{\mathrm{h}}(\mathrm{x})$ could be understood as the average of $n$ different probability densities $\mathrm{K}(\cdot)$ with the parameter $h$ controlling the dispersion of the $n$ densities.

In the smoothed bootstrap, the normal kernel is used, in which case $K(x)=\phi(x)$, and $\phi(x)$ is the standard normal density function. Therefore, in the smoothed bootstrap,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{F}_{h}(t)=\frac{1}{n h} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \phi\left(\frac{t-\hat{\theta}_{i}}{h}\right) \tag{4.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

here $h$ is the smoothing parameter, which is also called the window width or bandwidth. The smoothing parameter $h$ determines to what extent the data are smoothed in the DGP. Larger values of $h$ provide more smoothing than smaller values of $h$ because when $h$ is small, only a few observations closest to the point where the density is estimated influence the value of $\hat{F}_{h}(t)$. As h gets larger, further observations are included to determine $\hat{F}_{h}(t)$. Consequently, in two extreme situations when $h \rightarrow 0$ and when $h \rightarrow \infty$ the density will become the discrete empirical density function and a flat horizontal line respectively.

Also, it is proved that with $h$, the bias of $\hat{F}_{\mathrm{h}}(\mathbf{t})$ increases while the variance decreases. So when choosing the optimal $h$, there is always a trade-off between the bias of the estimator and its variance.

Silverman (1986) provides a formula for the optimal value of $h$, when the underlying density function is Gaussian and $\mathrm{K}(\cdot)$ is standard normal:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{N R}=1.06 \hat{o} \hat{n}^{-1 / 5} \tag{4.2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is referred to as the 'normal reference rule' or Silverman's rule of thumb.

A more robust choice is given by,

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{R}=1.06 \min (\hat{\sigma}, \hat{R} / 1.34) n^{-1 / 5} \tag{4.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{R}$ is the interquartile range.

Another commonly used criteria for choosing the bandwidth $h$ in kernel density estimation is data-driven criterion. Because, with discrete data, especially when the sample size is not very large, the density of the efficiency scores is likely to be not normally distributed, therefore,
this density may have moments different from a normal distribution. Data-driven methods provide ad hoc rules for choosing $h$. The approach is to minimize an estimate of either meanintegrated square error (MISE) or its asymptotic version (AMISE) which are called unbiased and biased cross-validation respectively. Silverman (1986) described a least-squares crossvalidation method which is a form of unbiased cross-validation; Simar and Wilson (2002) adapts it to the DEA context.

The MISE of kernel density function is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MISE}(h)=E\left[\int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\left(\hat{F}_{h}(x)-F(x)\right)^{2} d x\right] . \tag{4.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is computed by the Leave-one-out cross-validation least-square (LOOCV) and the function is as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
C V(h)=\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \hat{F}_{h}^{2}(x) d x-\frac{1}{2 m} \sum_{i=1}^{2 m} \hat{F}_{h,(i)}^{2}\left(\tilde{x}_{i}\right), \tag{4.2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $\hat{F}_{h,(i)}$ is the leave-one-out estimator of $F(x)$ based on the original observations (the m values $\hat{x}_{j} \neq 1$ ), except $\hat{x}_{i}$, with bandwidth $h$. And the optimal $h$ could be obtained by minimizing (4.2.29).

The above estimation has one problem; however, that is it does not take into account the boundary condition that $t<1$. To overcome this problem the reflection method has been used, which was described by Silverman (1986). In the reflection method, the points $\hat{\theta}_{i} \leq 1$ are reflected by its symmetric image $2-\hat{\theta}_{i} \geq 1, i=1, \ldots, n$, and then the kernel density estimator are modified from the resulting set of 2 n points to be,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{G}_{h}(t)=\frac{1}{2 n h} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[\phi\left(\frac{t-\hat{\theta}_{i}}{h}\right)+\phi\left(\frac{t-2+\hat{\theta}_{i}}{h}\right)\right] \tag{4.2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define

$$
\hat{F}_{\mathrm{s}, \mathrm{~h}}(\mathrm{t})=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
2 \hat{\mathrm{G}}_{\mathrm{h}}(\mathrm{t}) & \text { if } \mathrm{t} \leq 1  \tag{4.2.33}\\
0 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

It can be proved that $\hat{F}_{\mathrm{s}, \mathrm{h}}(\mathrm{t})$ is consistent for all $\mathrm{t} \leq 1$.

Under this reflection method, a certain procedures should be followed to generate samples $\theta_{1}^{*}, \ldots, \theta_{n}^{*}$ from $\hat{F}_{\mathrm{s}, \mathrm{h}}(\mathrm{t})$. First of all, let $\beta_{1}^{*}, \ldots, \beta_{n}^{*}$ be a set of bootstrap resample from $\hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}$. According to the convolution theorem in Efron and Tibshirani (1993), there is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}=\beta_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}+\mathrm{h} \varepsilon_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \sim \hat{\mathrm{G}}_{1, h}(t)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{\mathrm{~h}} \phi\left(\frac{t-\hat{\theta}_{i}}{h}\right) \tag{4.2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varepsilon_{i}^{*}$ is an error term from the standard normal distribution. Similarly, let $\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\mathrm{R}}$ be the reflection of $t_{i}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\mathrm{R}}=2-\beta_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}-\mathrm{h} \varepsilon_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \sim \hat{\mathrm{G}}_{2, h}(t)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{\mathrm{~h}} \phi\left(\frac{t-2+\hat{\theta}_{i}}{h}\right) \tag{4.2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

And $\hat{G}_{h}(t)$ in (4.2.28) may be written as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{G}_{h}(t)=\frac{1}{2} \hat{G}_{1, h}(t)+\frac{1}{2} \hat{G}_{2, h}(t) \tag{4.2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now the estimator of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$ is given by:

$$
\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\beta_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}+\mathrm{h} \varepsilon_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} & \text { if } \beta_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}+\mathrm{h} \varepsilon_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \leq 1  \tag{4.2.37}\\
2-\beta_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}-\mathrm{h} \varepsilon_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

It has been proved that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \sim \hat{F}_{\mathrm{s}, \mathrm{~h}}(\mathrm{t}) \tag{4.2.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}$ has the following properties:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \mid \hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}\right)=\hat{\mu},  \tag{4.2.39}\\
& \mathrm{V}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \mid \hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}\right)=\hat{\sigma}_{\theta}^{2}+\mathrm{h}^{2} \tag{4.2.40}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ is the sample variance of $\hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}=\frac{1}{\mathrm{n}} \sum\left(\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{2}-\hat{\bar{\theta}}\right)^{2} \tag{4.2.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

And $\hat{\mu}$ is the sample mean of the $\hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}$.

When kernel estimators are used, the variance of the generated bootstrap sequence must be corrected by computing

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{*}=\bar{\beta}^{*}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{1+h^{2} / \hat{\sigma}_{\theta}^{2}}}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{i}^{*}-\bar{\beta}^{*}\right) \tag{4.2.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $\bar{\beta}^{*}=(1 / n) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \beta_{i}^{*}$,
(4.2.32) and (4.2.33) become,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(\widetilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \mid \hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)=\hat{\mu}, \text { and } \tag{4.2.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{V}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*} \mid \hat{\theta}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{\theta}_{n}\right)=\hat{\sigma}_{\theta}^{2}\left(1+\frac{h^{2}}{n\left(\hat{\sigma}_{\theta}^{2}+h^{2}\right)}\right) \tag{4.2.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\theta_{i}^{*}$ has better properties than $\tilde{\theta}_{i}^{*}$ as variance of $\theta_{i}^{*}$ is asymptotically correct.

In the smoothed bootstrap, the problems that appear in the standard bootstrap are avoided. The empirical results to be reported in the thesis were all derived from MATLAB codes written by the researcher and these MATLAB codes are included as appendices to the thesis.

### 4.3 Algorithm of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model

First of all, DEA estimators are obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model mean augmentation approach using the following program:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \theta \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{j} w_{j}^{2} \sigma_{j, t}^{2}+\sum_{\substack{i=1 \\
i+j}}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{j, t}\right) \leq \sigma_{j_{0}}^{2}  \tag{4.3.1}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j, t}\right) \geq \vartheta E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right) \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

Secondly, to select replicates $\left\{\theta_{i b}^{*}\right\}_{b=1}^{\mathrm{B}} i=1, \ldots . \mathrm{n} . \mathrm{B}=2000$ from kernel density function using reflection method based on the DEA estimators obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model mean augmentation approach, with the optimal bootstrap smooth parameter $h$ automatically chosen in the program utilising cross-validation approach described by Silverman (1986). The corresponding formulas are from (4.2.30) to (4.2.44). In this application, the minimum and maximum replicates among $\left\{\theta_{i b}^{*}\right\}_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}} i=1, \ldots \mathrm{n} . \mathrm{B}=2000$ are set to be not below the minimum orginal DEA score and no above the maximum orginal DEA score. This way it could make sure all the replicates have the value equal or larger than one, and all the replicates produced are reasonable in this quadratic DEA case.

The third step is to obtain the bootstrap inputs using the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(R_{i b}, t\right)^{*}=\frac{\hat{\theta}_{i}}{\theta_{i b}^{*}} E\left(R_{i b}, t\right) \cdot i=1, \ldots \mathrm{n} \cdot \mathrm{~b}=1, \ldots B, \mathrm{~B}=2000, \mathrm{t}=1,2, \ldots \mathrm{~T} \tag{4.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally $\hat{\theta}_{i b}^{*}$ which is convenient to be expressed as $\hat{\theta}_{j_{0} b}^{*}$ in the following formula is computed by solving the following program.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { Max } & \hat{\theta}_{j_{0} b}^{*} \\
\text { s.t. } & \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j}=1 \\
& \sum_{j} w_{j}^{2} \sigma_{j, t}^{2}+\sum_{\substack{i=1 \\
i+j}}^{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{i} w_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(R_{i, t}, R_{j, t}\right) \leq \sigma_{j_{0}}^{2}  \tag{4.3.3}\\
& \sum_{j=1}^{N} w_{j} E\left(R_{j b, t}\right)^{*} \geq \hat{\vartheta}_{i b}^{*} E\left(R_{j_{0}, t}\right) \\
& (t=1,2, \ldots T)
\end{array}
$$

The distribution of the 2000 estimates $\hat{\theta}_{i b}{ }^{*}$ obtained from (4.3.3) approximates the distribution of the true efficiency estimator.

The bias of $\hat{\theta}_{i}$ as the estimator of true efficiency score $\theta$ is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{bias}_{i}=\frac{1}{\mathrm{~B}} \sum_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}} \hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{ib}}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}} \cdot=\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}} . \tag{4.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Bias corrected estimator $\tilde{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}=\hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}-\hat{\operatorname{bias}}_{\mathrm{i}} .=2 \hat{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}-\bar{\theta}_{\mathrm{i}}^{*}$.
(1- $\alpha$ )-percent confidence interval for the true efficiency score is calculated by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)+\hat{\alpha}_{\alpha} \leq \theta\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \leq \hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)+\hat{b}_{\alpha} \tag{4.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $95 \%$ confidence interval, $\hat{a}_{\alpha}$ and $\hat{b}_{\alpha}$ can be found by sorting the values $\left(\hat{\theta}_{i}^{*}-\hat{\theta}_{i}\right), b=1, \ldots, B, B=2000$ in increasing order and then delete 50 elements at either end of the sorted list. Then set $-\hat{b}_{\alpha}$ and $-\hat{a}_{\alpha}$ equal to the endpoints of the truncated, making sure $\hat{a}_{\alpha} \leq \hat{b}_{\alpha}$.

If bias-corrected estimators are considered, then replace $\tilde{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$ by $\hat{\theta}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$.
The consistency of the bootstrap depends on the resampling procedure (avoidance of naive bootstrapping) and this has been addressed by the design of the Simar-Wilson algorithm.

### 4.4 Data collection

The data used in this application is the DEA scores obtained from the Morey and Morey (1999) return augmentation approach. And the results in the following table are from Table 3.5.1 in the third chapter.

Table 4.4.1 Frontier values and scores from the mean return augmentation programming

| Fund No. and name | DEA scores |
| :--- | :--- |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 1.015 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 1.1505 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 1.0308 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 1.1359 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 1 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 1.8621 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 1.5914 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 1.7987 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 1.714 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 1.1116 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 1.9331 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 1 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 1.036 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 1.143 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 1.2532 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 1.0331 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 1.3196 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 1.3974 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 1.0031 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 1.3265 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 1.2344 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 1 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst Acc | 1 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 1.0006 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 1.4387 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 1.5747 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1.0593 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail |  |
|  |  |

### 4.5 Results analysis

The Bandwidth h selected is 0.2186 , calculated by least-squares cross-validation method described by Silverman (1986). The corresponding formulas are (4.2.28) and (4.2.29).
The results of bootstrapping DEA scores are as follows:

Table 4.5.1 Bootstrap results with Bandwidth $\mathrm{h}=0.2186$;

| N | estimates | bias | biascorrected estimator | Standard deviation | $\frac{\mid \text { bias }_{i} \mid}{\hat{\sigma}_{i}}$ | 95\% confidence interval |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  |  |  | Lower | Upper | differenc |
| 1 | 1.015 | -0.0102 | 1.0252 | 0.0075 | 1.3641 | 1.0082 | 1.0300 | 0.0218 |
| 2 | 1.1505 | -0.0078 | 1.1583 | 0.0252 | 0.3093 | 1.1345 | 1.2288 | 0.0943 |
| 3 | 1.0308 | -0.0039 | 1.0347 | 0.0138 | 0.2831 | 1.0166 | 1.0616 | 0.045 |
| 4 | 1.1359 | -0.0168 | 1.1527 | 0.0203 | 0.8291 | 1.1324 | 1.2054 | 0.073 |
| 5 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 6 | 1.8621 | -0.0335 | 1.8956 | 0.0540 | 0.6208 | 1.8329 | 2.0255 | 0.1926 |
| 7 | 1.5914 | -0.0242 | 1.6156 | 0.0462 | 0.5235 | 1.5641 | 1.7303 | 0.1662 |
| 8 | 1.7987 | -0.0381 | 1.8368 | 0.0574 | 0.6640 | 1.778 | 1.9707 | 0.1927 |
| 9 | 1.714 | -0.0345 | 1.7485 | 0.0543 | 0.6351 | 1.6947 | 1.8756 | 0.1809 |
| 10 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 11 | 1.1116 | -0.0306 | 1.1422 | 0.0562 | 0.5449 | 1.0455 | 1.2232 | 0.1777 |
| 12 | 1.9331 | -0.0405 | 1.9736 | 0.0908 | 0.4460 | 1.8541 | 2.1884 | 0.3343 |
| 13 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 14 | 1.036 | -0.0207 | 1.0567 | 0.0208 | 0.9929 | 1.0101 | 1.0720 | 0.0619 |
| 15 | 1.143 | -0.0439 | 1.1869 | 0.0489 | 0.8971 | 1.1200 | 1.2860 | 0.166 |
| 16 | 1.2532 | -0.0494 | 1.3026 | 0.0616 | 0.8017 | 1.2297 | 1.4617 | 0.2320 |
| 17 | 1.0331 | -0.0128 | 1.0459 | 0.0133 | 0.9652 | 1.0277 | 1.0664 | 0.0387 |
| 18 | 1.3196 | -0.00797 | 1.3276 | 0.0178 | 0.4489 | 1.2216 | 1.3560 | 0.1344 |
| 19 | 1.3974 | -0.0156 | 1.4130 | 0.0184 | 0.8466 | 1.3948 | 1.4571 | 0.0623 |
| 20 | 1.0031 | -0.0010 | 1.0041 | 0.0037 | 0.2675 | 1.0021 | 1.0062 | 0.0041 |
| 21 | 1.3265 | -0.0137 | 1.3402 | 0.0193 | 0.7114 | 1.3193 | 1.3852 | 0.0659 |
| 22 | 1.2344 | -0.0129 | 1.2473 | 0.0178 | 0.7249 | 1.2277 | 1.2889 | 0.0612 |
| 23 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 24 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 25 | 1.0006 | -0.0005 | 1.0011 | 0.0002 | 2.0229 | 1.0006 | 1.0012 | 0.0006 |
| 26 | 1.4387 | -0.0290 | 1.4677 | 0.0296 | 0.9809 | 1.4379 | 1.5458 | 0.1079 |
| 27 | 1.5747 | -0.0239 | 1.5986 | 0.0297 | 0.8053 | 1.5701 | 1.6800 | 0.1099 |
| 28 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | - | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 29 | 1.0593 | -0.0266 | 1.0859 | 0.0261 | 1.0204 | 1.0593 | 1.1186 | 0.0593 |

Table 4.5.1 shows the results for the bootstrap exercise for $B=2000$ and $h=0.2186$. Column 1 shows the fund number, while columns 2 to 5 give the original DEA efficiency estimates, the bias and the bias-corrected estimates, the standard deviations of the bootstrapped values and the value of $\frac{\left|b i a s_{i}\right|}{\hat{\sigma}_{i}}$; and the last column gives $95 \%$ confidence intervals for the efficiency estimates, showing the upper and lower bounds and the difference between them. From Table 4.5.1, the initial DEA model gave an average uncorrected efficiency score of 1.2470 , while the bootstrap model generated an average bias-corrected score of 1.2642. The minimum uncorrected score was 1 and the maximum was 1.9331, while the minimum bias corrected score was 1 and the maximum was 1.9736 . For the most efficient funds- fund 5,10,13,23,24 and fund 28, the 2000 bootstrap estimators are all equal to one, therefore the bias equal to zero and the bias corrected estimators are also equal to one. The $95 \%$ confidence intervals for these funds become a single point. The results also reveal that all the estimated biases are negative, which is as expected, because according to Simar and Wilson (1998), the DEA estimate is upwardly biased using an input oriented model and downwardly biased for an output oriented model. The original scores had a mean bias of -0.0168 . And the standard deviations for all the estimators are quite small with the maximum standard deviation equal to 0.0908. All the funds satisfy the condition of $\frac{\mid \text { bias }_{i} \mid}{\hat{\sigma}_{i}}>\frac{1}{4}$ (4.2.18), except for the most efficient funds which have both the bias and the standard deviation equal to zero. Lower bounds for the estimated $95 \%$ confidence intervals range from 1 for the six most efficient funds to 1.8541 for the $12^{\text {th }}$ fund. The estimated upper $95 \%$ confidence bounds range from 1 for the most efficient funds to 2.1884 for the $12^{\text {th }}$ fund. In addition, the differences between the upper and lower bounds range from 0 for the frontier funds to 0.3343 for Fund 12. From the results, all of the original DEA scores are within the lower and upper bounds of $95 \%$ confidence interval, with the maximum range is as small as 0.3343 . Therefore the statistical test indicates that the DEA scores are very reliable.

This conclusion can be further proved by the comparison between rankings of the funds from original DEA scores and rankings based on bias-corrected DEA scores. The results are showed as follows:

Table 4.5.2 Rankings before and after bias correction

| Fund No. And Name | Ranking from original DEA scores | Ranking from biascorrected DEA scores |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| (1) Aberdeen UK Mid Cap A Acc | 9 | 9 |
| (2) AEGON Ethical Equity A | 17 | 16 |
| (3) AEGON Ethical Equity B | 10 | 10 |
| (4) Allianz RCM UK Mid Cap A | 15 | 15 |
| (5) Artemis UK Special Situations | 1 | 1 |
| (6) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC1 | 28 | 28 |
| (7) Aviva Investors SF UK Growth SC2 | 25 | 25 |
| (8) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC1 | 27 | 27 |
| (9) Aviva Investors UK Ethical SC2 | 26 | 26 |
| (10) BlackRock UK Special Situations A Acc | 1 | 1 |
| (11) Ecclesiastical Amity UK C | 14 | 14 |
| (12) F\&C Stewardship Growth 1 Acc | 29 | 29 |
| (13) F\&C Stewardship Income 1 Acc | 1 | 1 |
| (14) GAM Exempt Trust UK Opportunities | 12 | 12 |
| (15) GAM UK Diversified Acc | 16 | 17 |
| (16) Henderson UK Equity Income I Acc | 19 | 19 |
| (17) HSBC FTSE 250 Index Retail Acc | 11 | 11 |
| (18) Marlborough UK Primary Opps A Acc | 20 | 20 |
| (19) Marlborough UK Primary Opps B Acc | 22 | 22 |
| (20) MFM Bowland | 8 | 8 |
| (21) Saracen Growth Alpha | 21 | 21 |
| (22) Saracen Growth Beta | 18 | 18 |
| (23) Schroder UK Mid 250 Acc | 1 | 1 |
| (24) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha Inst | 1 | 1 |
| (25) Standard Life UK Eq High Alpha R Acc | 7 | 7 |
| (26) Standard Life UK Ethical Inst | 23 | 23 |
| (27) Standard Life UK Ethical R | 24 | 24 |
| (28) SVM UK Opportunities Instl | 1 | 1 |
| (29) SVM UK Opportunities Retail | 13 | 13 |

From Table 4.5 .2 it can be seen that except fund 2 and fund 15, all the other funds have exactly the same rankings before and after bias correction. And the $2^{\text {nd }}$ fund has the ranking
of 17 based on original estimators while the bias corrected estimator for the $2^{\text {nd }}$ fund gives the ranking of 16 . For the fund 15 , it has the rankings of 16 and 17 before and after the bias correction respectively. Therefore, for funds 2 and 15 , the different rankings using original DEA scores and bias corrected DEA scores are very close.

### 4.6 Conclusion

Nonparametric efficiency measures are criticized for lacking a statistical basis. This is based on the fact that the efficiency scores obtained from DEA models are likely to be overestimated/ underestimated. However, it is demonstrated that boostrap methods can be used to provide the statistical inference for the DEA scores by focusing on the underlying DGP.

This application provides a statistical test of the DEA scores obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model by using bootstrap techniques introduced by Simar and Wilson (1998, 2000). Algorithms of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model are designed. The results show that the DEA scores from Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model are downwardly biased with a mean bias of -0.0168 , which is quite small. Also, the confidence intervals are fairly narrow for all the funds with the original estimators lie between the lower bounds and upper bounds. In addition, after the bias correction, 27 funds have the rankings unchanged compared with the rankings based on the original estimators with 2 funds have slight change in their rankings. Therefore, the conclusion could be drawn from this statistical test that the DEA scores obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) mean augmentation approach are very reliable.

Based on Morey and Morey (1999), which laid a foundation for the development of quadratic and cubic DEA models, Briec et al. (2004) applied a directional distance function which allowed simultaneous changes in the direction of reducing inputs and expanding outputs. Briec et al. (2007) extended the work of Briec et al. (2004) into mean-variance-skewness space using cubic programming. However, relevant empirical papers applying these methods are very few, and none of these papers discuss the statistical properties of DEA estimators. Therefore, statistical inferences need to be provided for these quadratic and cubic DEA models to test the reliability of the estimators and correct the biases. Bootstrap Algorithms for these quadratic and cubic DEA models have not been developed.

# Chapter 5 Evaluating contextual variables affecting investment trust performance in second stage DEA efficiency analyses 

### 5.1 Introduction and motivation

One type of investment fund is investment trust, which is close ended fund. It is actually a listed company, and differs from unit trusts in the sense that it issues equity itself and the number of shares is fixed as with any other company that issues shares. An investment trust normally only invests in specific types of assets for example UK technology shares and is banned from switching to other segments. There are over 350 investment trusts quoted in London, with total assets of over $£ 60$ billion.

Therefore it is meaningful to examine the efficiency of investment trusts, and to analyze the factors contributing to investment trusts performance and detect the determinants of inefficiency. Therefore second stage DEA efficiency analyses are used to evaluate contextual
variables affecting the fund performance. This framework involves two-stages. In the first stage, efficiency scores are calculated using Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model. And then in the second stage, these scores are correlated with other explanatory variables which also have an impact on the funds' performances. In this stage the DEA efficiency scores are regressed on potential factors to test the statistical significance of those factors.

Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are two traditional measurements that are often used to rank the performance of investment portfolios. Sharpe ratio is calculated by dividing a fund's annualized excess returns by the standard deviation of a fund's annualized excess returns and mutual funds with lager Sharpe Ratios are assumed to have better historical risk-adjusted performance than those with small ratios. Jensen's alpha, which is derived from the market model and the CAPM, is calculated by taking the excess funds return over the risk free rate and subtracting beta times the excess return of the benchmark over the risk free rate. Jensen's alpha represents the average incremental rate of return on the portfolio which is due solely to the manager's stock-selection abilities. A positive Alpha figure indicates the portfolio has performed better than the market beta would predict, and a negative Alpha indicates the portfolio has underperformed compared with the expectations established by beta.

The Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are based on the risk adjusted return analysis with Sharpe ratio having the standard deviation of the excess return of the fund over risk free rate as the risk measure and Jensen's alpha using beta representing the systematic risk in the market. Therefore they are likely to be significantly related to the efficiency scores of the investment trusts obtained by applying the quadratic DEA model with risk as input and return as output.

Also, one may be interested to see whether the fund expenses have an impact on the fund performance, for example, whether more efficient funds have higher expenses. The fund expense ratio is used, which is reflected in the fund's NAV. It is the percentage of fund assets that pays for operating expenses and management fees, including administrative fees, and all other asset-based costs incurred by the fund, except brokerage costs. Sales charges are not included in the expense ratio.

Stattman (1980) and Rosenberg, Reid, and Lanstein (1985) and Chan, Hamao and Lakonishok (1991) find that book-to-market ratio makes a positive contribution in explaining the average returns on stocks. $\operatorname{Basu}(1983)$ shows that earnings-price ratios(E/P) are positively
related to the average returns of U.S. stocks. Inspired by the above research, book-to-market ratio and price earnings ratio are also included in this application as potential factors to examine their influence on the investment trusts performance.

Another potential variable is market capitalization (a stock's price times its shares outstanding) which may have an impact on the funds efficiency in terms of the size effect.

Among the second stage DEA literature, OLS-robust, Tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge (PW) model are most commonly used second stage models. In this application, they are conducted and compared to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment funds.

Chapter 5 is organized as follows: Section 2 provides a literature review and methodology of second stage DEA models; Section 3 shows the data collection; Section 4 presents the results; and Section 5 gives the conclusion.

### 5.2 Literature review and methodology

Analysis of factors contributing to productivity efficiency has been an important area of research in DEA. Many studies have used the two-stage analysis of first calculating efficiency scores and then relating these scores to contextual variables. Examples are Ray (1991) and Forsund (1999). Among the literature, the commonly used two-stage methods include ordinary least squares (OLS), Tobit regression and the Papke-Wooldridge approach based on quasi-maximum likelihood estimation (QMLE).

Banker and Natarajan (2008) is a very important paper which provides a statistical foundation for two-stage analyses. Banker (2008) develops a basic model in which the contextual variables are linked to inefficiency. In this model, a single output, $y$, is specified as a general function of multiple inputs and an error term. It is illustrated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
y=\phi(X) * e^{\varepsilon^{*}} \tag{5.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\phi(X)$ is the true production function and $\varepsilon$ is an error term. The production function $\phi(\cdot)$ is monotone increasing and concave in input X . In this framework, consider j decisionmaking units (DMUs); $j=1, \ldots, N \quad X_{j} \equiv\left(x_{1 j}, \ldots, x_{I j}\right)$ is a vector inputs and $Z_{j} \equiv\left(z_{1 j}, \ldots, z_{S j}\right)$ is a
vector of contextual variables that may influence the overall productivity in transforming the inputs into the output. $X_{j}$ and $Z_{j}$ are nonnegative vectors.

The random variable $\varepsilon^{*}$ from (5.2.1) is generated by the process

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varepsilon^{*}=v-u-\sum_{s=1}^{S} \beta_{s} z_{s} \tag{5.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $v$ represents random noise and has a two sided distribution, and $u$ represents technical inefficiency and is asymmetrically distributed. $\beta_{s}, s=1, \ldots, S$, are nonnegative weights of the contextual variables $z_{s}$. Also it has $\varepsilon=v-u$. It assumes that the input variable vector $X$, the contextual variable vector $z$, the inefficiency $u$, and the noise $v$ are independently distributed. Therefore, the random variable consists of three components: a linear function of contextual variables; a technical inefficiency term and a random noise.

Banker and Natarajan (2008) claims that if it is assume $\phi(X)$ can be specified as $\phi(X ; \gamma)$, where $\gamma$ is a parameter vector; the relationship in (5.2.2) can be transformed to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln y=\ln \phi(X ; \gamma)-\sum_{s=1}^{S} \beta_{s} Z_{s}+\varepsilon \tag{5.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the spirit of the 'DEA+method' suggested by Gstach (1998), Banker and Natarajan (2008) defines

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \tilde{\phi}(X)=\ln \phi(\cdot)+V^{M} \tag{5.2.4a}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \ln \tilde{\theta}=\left(\varepsilon-V^{M}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} z_{i}  \tag{5.2.4b}\\
= & \left(v-V^{M}\right)-u-\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} z_{i} \leq 0
\end{align*}
$$

where $\tilde{\phi}(X)$ is also monotone increasing and concave. Inserting (5.2.4a) and (5.2.4b) into (5.2.1) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln y=\ln \tilde{\phi}(X)+\ln \tilde{\theta} \tag{5.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\widetilde{\varepsilon}=V^{M}-\varepsilon$, then (3.2.4) could be expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \tilde{\theta}=\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} z_{i}-\tilde{\varepsilon} \tag{5.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus the DEA scores obtained from the first stage are related to the contextual variables.

In practice, the corresponding DEA estimator $\ln \hat{\tilde{\theta}}$ will replace $\ln \tilde{\theta}$ as the dependent variable in (5.2.6). And then OLS can be used. Banker (1993) proves that the generated estimators of $\beta_{i}$ are consistent; the corresponding t-statistic provides significance of a particular contextual variable. Alternatively, if a specific parametric form is assumed for the p.d.f. of $\varepsilon$, e.g. $v$ is normally distributed $u$ is either half normal or exponential, then maximum likelihood estimation (MLE) can be used. And the generated estimators $\beta_{i}$ are consistent, efficient and asymptotically normally distributed; the corresponding $t$-statistics can provide the significant test of contextual variables.
(1) OLS estimation

Define $\beta_{0}=E(\varepsilon)-V^{M}$ and $\delta=\varepsilon-E(\varepsilon)$, (5.2.6) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \theta=\beta_{0}-\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} z_{i}+\delta . \tag{5.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the error term $\delta$ in (5.2.7) has a zero mean and a finite variance.
$\operatorname{Banker}(2009)$ proves that if $Q=p \lim \left(Z^{\prime} Z / n\right)$ is a positive definite matrix, then the OLS estimator of $\tilde{\beta}$ in

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \hat{\tilde{\theta}}=\tilde{\beta}_{0}-Z \tilde{\beta}+\tilde{\delta} \tag{5.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

yields a consistent estimator of the parameter vector $\beta$.
(2) MLE estimation
(5.2.6) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varepsilon=\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} z_{i}+V^{M}+\ln \theta \tag{5.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The log-likelihood function can be formed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=1}^{N} \operatorname{Ln} f\left(\sum_{i=1}^{S} \beta_{i} Z_{i j}+V^{M}+\ln \theta\right) \tag{5.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Banker (2009) proves that maximizing (5.2.10) yields consistent estimators of $\beta$.

Another very commonly used method in the second stage analysis is the Tobit model. Tobit model is a censored regression model, and is employed when the dependent variables are limited within a particular range. For DEA models, the output oriented DEA have the scores bounded above 1, and the input oriented DEA have the scores limited between zero and one. Therefore, the Tobit model is often used instead of OLS to evaluate the effects of contextual variables. Researchers who have applied tobit at second stage DEA to explain the efficiency distributions include Bravo-Ureta et al. (2007), Latruffe et al. (2004), Oum and Yu (2004), Fethi et al. (2002), Vestergaard et al. (2002), Ruggiero and Vitaliano (1999), Viitala and Hanninen (1998), Kirjavainen and Loikkanen (1998), Gillen and Lall (1997), Luoma et al. (1996), Chilingerian (1995) and Bjurek et al. (1992).

Followed by an input oriented DEA model, which gives the DEA scores ranging from zero to one, a two-limit tobit method is used.

The two-limit Tobit model is defined as

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
y_{i}^{*}=x_{i} \beta_{i}+\varepsilon_{i} \\
y_{i}=y_{i}^{*} & \text { if } & 0 \leq y_{i}^{*} \leq 1 \\
y_{i}=0 & \text { if } & y_{i}^{*}<0  \tag{5.2.11}\\
y_{i}=1 & \text { if } & y_{i}^{*}>1
\end{array}
$$

Where $y_{i}^{*}$ is the latent dependent variable, $y_{i}$ is the observed dependent variable, $x_{i}$ is the vector of the independent variables, and the $\varepsilon_{i}$ are assumed to be independently normally distributed: $\varepsilon_{i} \sim N(0, \sigma)$.

Given (5.2.11) is the data generating process (DGP), the combined likelihood for a sample containing some $y_{i}$-observations $=0$, some $=1$ and some between 0 and 1 is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
L=\prod_{y_{i}=0} P\left(y_{i}=0\right) \prod_{y_{i}=1} P\left(y_{i}=1\right) \prod_{0<0 y_{i}<1} P\left(0<y_{i}<1\right) \tag{5.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

According to Hoff(2007),

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(y_{i}=0\right)=F\left(-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i} \mid 0, \sigma\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi \sigma^{2}}} \int_{-\infty}^{-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}} e^{-t^{2\left(2 \sigma^{2}\right)}} d t \tag{5.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $F(x \mid \mu, \sigma)$ is the cumulative distribution function.

Likewise:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(y_{i}=1\right)=F\left(-\left(1 \sum-\beta_{i} x_{i}\right) \mid 0, \sigma\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi \sigma^{2}}} \int_{-\infty}^{-\left(1-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}\right)} e^{-t^{2 /\left(2 \sigma^{2}\right)}} d t . \tag{5.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(y_{i} \mid 0<y<1\right)=f\left(y_{i}-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i} \mid 0, \sigma\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi \sigma^{2}}} e^{-\left(y_{i}-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}\right)^{2} /\left(2 \sigma^{2}\right)} \tag{5.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $f(x \mid \mu, \sigma)$ is the probability density function.

If there are no $y_{i}$-observations $=0$, which is the case in DEA models, then the first term in (5.2.12) will disappear, thus the likelihood functions for two-limit tobit (2LT) and one-limit tobit (1LT), with a limit at one, will be identical. Furthermore, if there are no $y_{i}-$ observations $=0$ and 1 , both of the first two terms will disappear, leaving the third term alone to be maximized in the likelihood function. Thus in this case the 2LT and 1LT MLE and OLS estimates are identical.

There are some drawbacks about Tobit models. Many researchers argued that the Tobit model is misspecified when applied to DEA scores, because no efficiency score would be equal to zero. Therefore the first multiplication in (5.2.12) will be left out. Although it has been argued as misspecified, the two-limit Tobit model has been one of the most often used method in second stage DEA.

Besides the two-limit Tobit model, Greene (1993) suggests the use of censoring at zero, which gives the computational convenience. Fethi et al (2002) describes a model which makes a transformation to the original DEA score to allow the censoring point concentrating at zero.

The dependent variable is obtained by taking the reciprocal of DEA score minus one, and this model is illustrated as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \quad y_{i}=(1 / \theta)-1  \tag{5.2.16}\\
& y_{i}^{*}=\beta_{i} x_{i}+\varepsilon_{i} \\
& y_{i}=y_{i}^{*} \quad \text { if } \quad y_{i}^{*} \phi 0, \text { and }  \tag{5.2.17}\\
& y_{i}=0, \text { otherwise }
\end{align*}
$$

Where $\varepsilon \sim N\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)$

The corresponding likelihood function (L) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
L=\prod_{y_{i}=0}\left(1-F_{i}\right) \prod_{y_{i} \phi 0} \frac{1}{\left(2 \pi \sigma^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}} \times e^{-\left[1 /\left(2 \sigma^{2}\right)\left(y_{i}-\beta_{i} x_{i}\right)^{2}\right.} \tag{5.2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{i}=\int_{-\infty}^{\beta_{i,} x_{i} / \sigma} \frac{1}{\left(2 \pi \sigma^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}} e^{-t^{2} / 2} d t \tag{5.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Take the logarithm form of the likelihood function:

$$
\begin{equation*}
L L F=\ln L=\sum \ln \left(1-F_{i}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \ln \sigma^{2}-\sum\left(Y_{i}-\beta_{i} x_{i}\right) /\left(2 \sigma^{2}\right) \tag{5.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

To obtain the estimators of $\beta_{i}$, the logarithm likelihood function is maximised as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{LLF}\left(\hat{\beta}, \hat{\sigma}^{2}\right)=\max _{\beta, \sigma^{2}} L L F\left(\beta, \sigma^{2}\right) \tag{5.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

To analyze the effect of the contextual variables to the productivity, the marginal effects of the independent variables need to be examined. Hoff (2007) derives the marginal effect of the individual explanatory variable $x_{m}$ on the expectation of y in a two-limit tobit case. It is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial E(y / x)}{\partial x_{m}}=\beta_{m}\left[\Phi\left(\frac{1-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}}{\sigma}\right)-\Phi\left(\frac{-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}}{\sigma}\right)\right] \tag{5.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $\Phi(\cdot)$ is the standard normal cumulative distribution function.

McDonald and Moffitt (1980) provides another useful interpretation of the marginal effects in a one-limit tobit case which has the censoring point concentrating at zero. It is expressed as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial E(y / x)}{\partial x_{m}}=P(y>0) \frac{\partial E[y \mid y>0]}{\partial x_{m}}+(\partial E[y \mid y>0]) \frac{\partial P(y>0)}{\partial x_{m}} \tag{5.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

(5.2.23) shows the decomposition of Tobit marginal effects: a change in $x_{m}$ affects two parts: (1) it affects the conditional mean of $y_{i}$ in the non-limit part of the distribution; and (2) it affects the probability that the observation being above the limit.

It is argued that the DEA scores are not generated by a censoring process in which case Tobit regression is inappropriate. Instead the DEA scores are fractional data. Simar and Wilson (2007) and McDonald (2009) claim that the DEA programming, as an efficiency score generating process, gives a normalization process rather than censoring. The result that all the efficiency scores lies within the range $(0,1]$ is a product of the way the programming defines, which is not out of a censoring mechanism. The regression dependent variable, then, is not censored data, but fractional data. Papke and Wooldridge (1996) propose a fractional response model that extends the generalized linear model (GLM) literature from statistic. They construct a model based on quasi-maximum likelihood estimation (QMLE) to deal with fractional dependent variable, which confined to the ( 0,1 ] interval, with many observations at the right boundary, 1 .

The fractional response model is based on the Bernoulli distribution function, which is a subset of the binomial distribution function. Assume there are sequences of $n$ independent success/failure experiments (also called n'trials') for N DEA units, Define

$$
Z= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if the outcome is a success }  \tag{5.2.24}\\ 0 & \text { if the outcome is a failure }\end{cases}
$$

The probability of success in unit i is $\operatorname{Pr}(Z=1)=\pi_{i} i=1, \ldots, N$ and the probability of failure is therefore $\operatorname{Pr}(Z=0)=1-\pi_{i}$. An important characteristic of $\pi$ is that it's restricted to the
interval $[0,1]$. The number of successes for unit i in n trials is denoted by $Y_{i}$. There is $E\left(Y_{i}\right)=n_{i} \pi_{i}$ and the corresponding share in each trial is $y_{i}=\frac{Y_{i}}{n_{i}}$. Thus $E\left(y_{i}\right)=\pi_{i}$ with $0 \leq y_{i} \leq 1$.

The conditional binomial probability density function for group i is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f\left(y_{i} \mid X_{i}, n_{i}\right)=\binom{n_{i}}{n_{i} y_{i}} \pi_{i}^{n_{i} y_{i}}\left(1-\pi_{i}\right)^{n_{i}-n_{i} y_{i}} \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where $X_{i}$ refers to a set of explanatory variables with the corresponding parameter vector $\beta$. When $\mathrm{n}=1$, the binomial distribution is a Bernoulli distribution and probability density function becomes,

$$
\begin{equation*}
f\left(y_{i} \mid X_{i}\right)=\pi_{i}^{y_{j}}\left(1-\pi_{i}\right)^{1-y_{i}} \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

The joint density function is as follows,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi_{i}^{y_{j}}\left(1-\pi_{i}\right)^{1-y_{i}}=\exp \left[\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i} \ln \left(\frac{\pi_{i}}{1-\pi_{i}}\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{n} \ln \left(1-\pi_{i}\right)\right] \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi_{i}^{y_{i}}\left(1-\pi_{i}\right)^{1-y_{i}}=\exp \left[\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i} \ln \left(\pi_{i}\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1-y_{i}\right) \ln \left(1-\pi_{i}\right)\right] \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a member of the exponential family. The conditional expectation of the fractional response variable ${ }^{y_{i} \text { is specified as }}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(y_{i} \mid X_{i}\right)=G\left(X_{i} \beta\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Logistic or logit regression and probit regression are chosen as link functions to ensure that $\pi$ is restricted to the interval $[0,1]$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
g\left(\pi_{i}\right)=G\left(X_{i} \beta\right) \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $g\left(\pi_{i}\right)$ is called the link function.

The Probit model is constructed as follows,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \pi=\frac{1}{\sigma \sqrt{2 \pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{x} \exp \left[-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{x-\mu}{\sigma}\right)^{2}\right] d x \\
& =\Phi\left(\frac{x-\mu}{\sigma}\right) \tag{5.2.31}
\end{align*}
$$

Where $\Phi$ denotes the cumulative probability function for the standard normal distribution $N(0,1)$. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
g\left(\pi_{j}\right)=\Phi^{-1}(\pi) \tag{5.2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the link function $g\left(\pi_{j}\right)$ is the inverse cumulative normal probability function $\Phi^{-1}$.

Another model that gives similar distribution from the probit model is the logistic model. It is constructed as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\pi_{i}=\frac{1}{1+e^{-G\left(x_{i} \beta\right)}}=\frac{e^{G\left(x_{i} \beta\right)}}{1+e^{G\left(x_{i} \beta\right)}} \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log i t \pi_{i}=\log \left(\frac{\pi_{i}}{1-\pi_{i}}\right)=G\left(x_{i}, \beta\right) \quad i=1, \ldots, N \tag{5.2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

And $\log \left[\pi_{i} /\left(1-\pi_{i}\right)\right]$ is called the logit function.

In the QMLE the mean is substituted for $\pi_{i}$, therefore, substituting $G\left(X_{i} \beta\right)$ for $\pi_{i}$ in (3.2.28), the the Bernoulli likelihood is given by the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \left(f_{i}(\beta)\right)=y_{i} \ln \left(G\left(X_{i} \beta\right)\right)+\left(1-y_{i}\right) \ln \left(1-G\left(X_{i} \beta\right)\right) \tag{5.2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

The likelihood is a re-parameterization of the probability distribution function to estimate parameter vector ${ }^{\beta}$. By taking the natural $\log$ of (35), the Bernoulli $\log$ likelihood is as follows,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{N} \ln \left(f_{i}(\beta)\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(y_{i} \ln \left(G\left(X_{i} \beta\right)\right)+\left(1-y_{i}\right) \ln \left(1-G\left(X_{i} \beta\right)\right)\right) \tag{5.2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

And the quasi-maximum likelihood estimator (QMLE) of $\beta$ could be obtained by maximizing (36). Practically, it means to take the first derivative of the log-likelihood function and to solve the following equation.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \sum_{i=1}^{N} \ln \left(f_{i}(\beta)\right)}{\partial \beta}=0 \tag{5.2.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hoff (2007) derives the marginal effect of the explanatory variable $x_{m}$ on the expectation of y when logit function is used is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial E(y / x)}{\partial x_{m}}=\beta_{m}\left[\frac{\exp \left(-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}\right)}{\left.1+\exp \left(-\sum \beta_{i} x_{i}\right)\right)^{2}}\right] \tag{5.2.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

There is only one paper being found using the second stage models to analyze the performance about exchange traded funds. Tsolas (2011) employs a Tobit model to measure the performance of a sample of natural resources exchange traded funds using time-series data. The DEA approaches of Haslem and Scheraga $(2003,2006)$ and of Kerstens and Van de Woestyne (2011) are applied. The former use Sharpe ratio as output and variables with positive user costs are chosen as inputs; the latter use Jensen's alpha as a single output or both the Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha as outputs and some ETFs characteristics are identified as inputs. In Tsolas (2011) the chosen explanatory variables include PE ratio, beta coefficient, persistence and size. In this thesis, the second stage models including the Papke-Wooldridge approach are estimated using the STATA software application.

### 5.3 Data collection

The databases used in this application are Morningstar Direct database and Datastream. The funds chosen were one specific type of the UK investment trusts: those classified by Morningstar as 'UK equity Mid/Small cap'. Another important criterion is that the funds selected must have at least 3 years of monthly returns, Sharp ratio, Jensen's Alpha, net expense ratio, price to earning ratio, market capitalization, price, and net asset value data available. Price and net asset value data are needed to calculate the book to market ratio. The sample period is from January1, 2008 to December 31, 2010, therefore, each fund selected need to have an inception date at or before January 1, 2008.

There are 33 funds categorized as UK equity Mid/Small cap in the Morningstar Direct database, with 4 funds being deleted from the sample because monthly returns are missing. 3 funds were further deleted because of negative mean returns, with 26 funds remaining in the sample. Data of Sharp ratio, Jensen's Alpha, net expense ratio are obtained from Morningstar direct database, while data of price to earnings ratio, market capitalization, price, and net asset value ratio are drawn from Datastream. However, only 13 funds with complete data of Sharp ratio, Jensen's Alpha, net expense ratio, price to earning ratio, market capitalization, price, and net asset value data can be found in the Morningstar Direct database and Datastream. For
each of the 13 funds, the following figures were calculated for the 3-year time periods: (i) Mean monthly returns; (ii) Covariances; (iii) Variances. These values were calculated using monthly return data from Morningstar Direct database. Expressed in percentage terms, Morningstar's calculation of monthly return is determined by taking the change in monthly net asset value, reinvesting all income and capital-gains distributions during that month, and dividing by the starting net asset value. The total returns account for management, administrative, fees and other costs taken out of fund assets. The mean return is the timeseries average of the 36 monthly returns. The 3 year mean returns for selected funds are presented in table 1.

Table 5.3.1 three year mean returns for selected funds

| Fund Number | Fund name | 3 year mean returns |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 | Small Companies Dividend Trust Ord. | 0.08 |
| 2 | JPMorgan Mid-Cap IT ORD | 0.08 |
| 3 | Dunedin Smaller Companies Ord | 0.90 |
| 4 | Lowland Inv Tr | 0.44 |
| 5 | Schroder UK Mid Cap | 0.76 |
| 6 | Standard Life UK Smaller Companies | 1.51 |
| 7 | Invesco Perpetual UK Smaller | 0.63 |
| 8 | Aurora Investment Trust PLC | 1.46 |
| 9 | JPMorgan Smaller Companies IT ORD | 0.74 |
| 10 | The Throgmorton Trust PLC | 1.00 |
| 11 | Henderson Opportunities Trust | 0.37 |
| 12 | BlackRock Smaller Companies Trust | 1.46 |
| 13 | Artemis Alpha Trust PLC | 1.31 |

The Sharpe ratio, Jensen's alpha, net expense ratio, price/earnings ratio, market capitalization (market value) and book to market ratio are showed in table 5.3.2. They are all time-series average of yearly data from 2008 to 2010. Book to market ratio are calculated using price and net asset value (book value) data from Datastream.

Table 5.3.2 time-series average of yearly data from 2008 to 2010

| Fund Number | Sharpe | Alpha | NER | PE | MV | BTM |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 | -0.20 | 0.50 | 2.02 | 7.60 | 14.71 | 1.14 |
| 2 | -0.24 | -5.21 | 0.62 | 23.87 | 105.38 | 1.15 |
| 3 | 0.05 | 9.47 | 1.49 | 22.83 | 44.43 | 1.30 |
| 4 | -0.11 | 8.38 | 0.80 | 24.23 | 172.50 | 1.07 |
| 5 | -0.01 | 3.11 | 0.91 | 35.67 | 65.06 | 1.32 |
| 6 | 0.30 | 10.90 | 1.21 | 377.93 | 46.89 | 1.31 |
| 7 | -0.06 | 0.59 | 1.32 | 36.80 | 87.82 | 1.22 |
| 8 | 0.20 | 21.65 | 2.08 | 118.37 | 19.52 | 1.17 |
| 9 | -0.01 | 9.17 | 0.76 | 47.77 | 69.08 | 1.28 |
| 10 | 0.07 | 8.05 | 1.23 | 54.03 | 120.47 | 1.30 |
| 11 | -0.12 | 8.08 | 1.02 | 47.20 | 28.24 | 1.25 |
| 12 | 0.22 | 13.67 | 1.07 | 40.27 | 126.03 | 1.31 |
| 13 | 0.22 | 15.13 | 1.03 | 95.47 | 62.82 | 1.32 |

### 5.4 Results analysis

In the first stage, the DEA scores are obtained using 3-year period mean monthly returns. Morey and Morey (1999) combined 3-year, 5-year and 10 year data in the programming, but only 3-year period data is used in this application, firstly because for 10 year-period, even fewer funds with complete data could be found since it is a very long period; secondly, if DEA score as dependent variable is derived from a combination of 3-year, 5-year and 10 year data, then the period for the independent variables would be difficult to choose.

Risk contraction approach is chosen in this application because in this approach, the DEA scores as dependent variable have values between zero and one, therefore it is more representatable. The results are showed in Table 5.4.1:

Table 5.4.1 DEA scores from Risk contraction approach.

| Risk contraction approach |  | DEA scores |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | Fund name | 0.3139 |
| 1 | Small Companies Dividend Trust Ord. | 0.5008 |
| 2 | JPMorgan Mid-Cap IT ORD | 0.7269 |
| 3 | Dunedin Smaller Companies Ord | 0.4482 |
| 4 | Lowland Inv Tr | 0.7744 |
| 5 | Schroder UK Mid Cap | 1 |
| 6 | Standard Life UK Smaller Companies | 0.8076 |
| 7 | Invesco Perpetual UK Smaller | 0.3718 |
| 8 | Aurora Investment Trust PLC | 0.4794 |
| 9 | JPMorgan Smaller Companies IT ORD | 0.5267 |
| 10 | The Throgmorton Trust PLC | 0.3779 |
| 11 | Henderson Opportunities Trust | 0.5024 |
| 12 | BlackRock Smaller Companies Trust | 0.8916 |
| 13 | Artemis Alpha Trust PLC |  |

Table 5.4.2 Summary statistics

| Factor | Mean | Standard <br> deviation | Minimum | Maximum |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| Number of observations=13 |  |  |  |  |
| Sharp Ratio | 0.02 | 0.17 | -0.24 | 0.30 |
| Alpha | 7.96 | 7.02 | -5.21 | 21.65 |
| NER | 1.20 | 0.45 | 0.62 | 2.08 |
| PE | 71.70 | 96.85 | 7.60 | 377.93 |
| MV | 74.07 | 46.69 | 14.71 | 172.50 |
| BTM | 1.24 | 0.08 | 1.07 | 1.32 |

Robust-OLS regression, Tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge (PW) models are conducted and compared to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment trusts. PW quasi-maximum-likelihood model is designed to address the problem of non-i.i.d. errors (specifically including heteroscedasticity) in the regression in an optimal estimation procedure. The DEA efficiency scores are regressed on potential variables including Sharpe ratio, Jensen's alpha, expense ratio, Price/Earnings ratio, market capitalization, book to market ratio of the investment funds to test the statistical significance of those factors.

Positive relations between the DEA scores and Sharpe ratio, DEA scores and Jensen's alpha are expected. Sharpe ratio is calculated by dividing a fund's annualized excess returns by the standard deviation of a fund's annualized excess returns and mutual funds with lager Sharpe Ratios are assumed to have better historical risk-adjusted performance than those with small ratios. Jensen's alpha is calculated by taking the excess funds return over the risk free rate and subtracting beta times the excess return of the benchmark over the risk free rate. Jensen's alpha represents the average incremental rate of return on the portfolio which is due solely to the manager's stock-selection abilities. Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are two measurements that are also in mean and variance space; therefore, positive relationships between both measures and the DEA scores are expected. The DEA scores and net expense ratio however, should be negatively related because the higher the expense, the less profitable the investment funds. Book to market ratio is a ratio between book value or net tangible assets per share and the price. If the ratio is above 1 then the stock is undervalued; if it is less than 1 , the stock is overvalued. In the long run, the undervalued investment trusts should be more efficient.

Therefore, a positive relationship between the book to market value and the efficiency measure would be expected. The price/Earnings ratio is obtained by dividing the company's market capitalization by its total annual earnings. In general, a high P/E suggests that investors are expecting higher earnings growth in the future compared to companies with a lower P/E, therefore, the higher PE ratio is, the more efficient the investment trust would be, which indicates that there would be a positive relationship between the DEA score and the PE ratio. For the market capitalisation, it's not clear what relationship it would be because it's hard to predict whether the smaller fund or the larger fund is more efficient than the other type. Results from different models are presented in table 5.4.3.

Table 5.4.3 Results from different models

| Factor | OLS | Two Limit Tobit/ One Limit Tobit | Tobit censoring at zero | PW(logit) |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Sharp Ratio | $\begin{aligned} & 2.0697 \\ & (1.2631) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 1.9306 \\ & (0.9072) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -5.6383 \\ & (2.4381) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 7.7289 \\ & (4.3902) \end{aligned}$ |
| Alpha | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0347 \\ & (0.0168) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0356 \\ & (0.0121) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.1016 \\ & (0.0327) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.1562 \\ & (0.0584) \end{aligned}$ |
| NER | $\begin{aligned} & -0.1912 \\ & (0.1877) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.1679 \\ & (0.1381) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.6014 \\ & (0.3405) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.6423 \\ & (0.6835) \end{aligned}$ |
| PE | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0002 \\ & (0.0010) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.0006 \\ & (0.0010) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0014 \\ & (0.0043) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.0063 \\ & (0.0060) \end{aligned}$ |
| MV | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0016 \\ & (1.1771) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0013 \\ & (0.0014) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.0014 \\ & (0.0032) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.0047 \\ & (0.0072) \end{aligned}$ |
| BTM | $\begin{aligned} & -0.5086 \\ & (1.8924) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.3505 \\ & (0.90371) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 0.1408 \\ & (2.2171) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & -0.9597 \\ & (4.5314) \end{aligned}$ |

Notes: the quantities in () are the standard errors robust to variance misspecification.

The third column of table 5.4 .3 contains the results of estimating equation (5.2.11), followed by the fourth column which shows the results of estimating (5.2.16)-(5.2.17). And the fifth column gives the results of $(5.2 .29)$ given (5.2.33) as the link function.

The one limit tobit with a limit at one has the same result as that of two limit tobit model because there is no DEA score equal to be zero, therefore the first term in (5.2.12) will disappear, thus the likelihood functions for two-limit tobit (2LT) and one-limit tobit (1LT), with a limit at one, will be identical.

Heteroscedasticity is expected in all models because cross sectional data is used. Therefore the heteroscedasticity-robust standard errors are reported in brackets below the coefficients. Also it is very often in the second stage models that the independent variables are to some extent correlated with each other. The correlation matrix among six independent variables is showed in table 5.4.4.

Table 5.4.4 Correlation matrix

|  | Sharpe | Alpha | NER | PE | MV | BTM |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Sharpe | 1 | 0.8016 | 0.1859 | 0.6556 | -0.1038 | 0.6139 |
| Alpha | 0.8016 | 1 | 0.3155 | 0.3609 | -0.1650 | 0.2822 |
| NER | 0.1859 | 0.3155 | 1 | 0.0863 | -0.6061 | -0.1587 |
| PE | 0.6556 | 0.3609 | 0.0863 | 1 | -0.2473 | 0.3015 |
| MV | -0.1038 | -0.1650 | -0.6061 | -0.2473 | 1 | -0.2052 |
| BTM | 0.6139 | 0.2822 | -0.1587 | 0.3015 | -0.2053 | 1 |

Results from table 5.4.4 show that Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are most highly correlated. This is because despite all other relations, Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha both have expected returns in their models. The correlation coefficient is as high as 0.6556 between PE ratio and Sharpe ratio, with any other two variables more or less correlated with each other.

Marginal effects of Robust-OLS are regression coefficients corresponding to each variables; and marginal effects of two limit tobit, one limit model censoring at zero and PW model are given by (5.2.22), (5.2.23) and (5.2.38). The results are showed in the following table.

Table 5.4.5 Average marginal effects

| Factor | Robust-OLS | Two Limit Tobit/ <br> One Limit Tobit | Tobit censoring <br> at zero | PW |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Sharp <br> Ratio | 2.0697 <br> $(0.152)$ | $1.9306^{*}$ <br> $(0.054)$ | $-5.6383^{*}$ <br> $(0.066)$ | 1.6133 <br> $(0.660)$ |
| Alpha | $-0.0347^{*}$ <br> $(0.084)$ | $-0.0356^{* * *}$ <br> $(0.008)$ | $0.1016^{* *}$ <br> $(0.012)$ | -0.0326 <br> $(0.487)$ |
| NER | -0.1912 <br> $(0.348)$ | -0.1679 <br> $(0.283)$ | 0.6014 <br> $(0.209)$ | -0.1341 <br> $(0.820)$ |
| PE | -0.0002 <br> $(0.833)$ | 0.0006 <br> $(0.638)$ | -0.0014 <br> $(0.783)$ | 0.0013 <br> $(0.813)$ |
| MV | -0.0016 <br> $(0.420)$ | -0.0013 <br> $(0.430)$ | 0.0014 <br> $(0.775)$ | -0.0010 <br> $(0.875)$ |
| BTM | -0.5086 <br> $(0.681)$ | -0.3504 <br> $(0.747)$ | 0.1408 <br> $(0.966)$ | -0.2003 <br> $(0.961)$ |

Notes: The quantities in () below correlation coefficients are the corresponding p-values;

* $\mathrm{p}<0.1,{ }^{* *} \mathrm{p}<0.05,{ }^{* * *} \mathrm{p}<0.01$.

The results show that firstly, Shape ratio and price/earnings ratio have positive impact on the fund performance under Robust-OLS and three tobit models, but not statistically significant, while Jensen's alpha, net expense ratio, market value, and book to market ratio of the fund have negative impact on the fund performance, but only Jensen's alpha is statistically significant in three tobit models. Secondly, for the average marginal effects, and magnitude of all the factors are fairly close for OLS and Two limit and One limit tobit models, and PW model with the same sign, while the results from tobit model censoring at zero has the opposite sign and different magnitude. This is because in tobit model censoring at zero, the dependent variable is obtained by taking the reciprocal of DEA score minus one, therefore the positive relation between DEA scores and the dependent variable in other regressions turn to negative in this model. Note that the p values of the marginal effects from PW model are much larger than other models except of the last factor book to market ratio, where Tobit model censoring at zero has slightly larger p value.

From table 5.4.5, except the Jensen's alpha in Tobit models, all the other factors have p values larger than the critical value 0.05 for $95 \%$ confidence level, which means that these factors contribute very little to the explanation of investment fund mean return. This could be due to model misspecification, for example, inclusion of irrelevant variables. In addition, because Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are two measurements that are based on the meanvariance framework, and Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model is also constructed in mean and variance space. One may be interested in the correlation of the rankings of funds using DEA scores, Shape ratio and Jensen's alpha. Table 5.4 .6 shows rankings of the 13 sample funds from different models while Table 5.4.7 gives the correlation among rankings from different models.

Table 5.4.6 Rankings from different models

| Fund number | DEA | Sharpe | Alpha |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 | 13 | 12 | 12 |
| 2 | 8 | 13 | 13 |
| 3 | 5 | 6 | 5 |
| 4 | 10 | 10 | 7 |
| 5 | 4 | 7 | 10 |
| 6 | 1 | 1 | 4 |
| 7 | 3 | 9 | 11 |
| 8 | 12 | 4 | 1 |
| 9 | 9 | 7 | 6 |
| 10 | 6 | 5 | 9 |
| 11 | 11 | 11 | 8 |
| 12 | 7 | 2 | 3 |
| 13 | 2 | 2 | 2 |

Table 5.4.7 Correlation among rankings from different models

|  | DEA | Sharpe | Alpha |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| DEA | 1 | $0.5543^{* *}$ <br> $(0.0493)$ | 0.1538 <br> $(0.6158)$ |
| Sharp | $0.5543^{* *}$ <br> $(0.0493)$ | 1 | $0.82^{* * *}$ <br> $(0.0006)$ |
| Alpha | 0.1538 <br> $(0.6158)$ | $0.8181^{* * *}$ <br> $(0.0006)$ | 1 |

Notes: The quantities in () below correlation coefficients are the corresponding p-values;

$$
\text { * } \mathrm{p}<0.1, * * \mathrm{p}<0.05, * * * \mathrm{p}<0.01 .
$$

The results show that there is quite high correlation between the ranking from the quadratic DEA model and Sharpe ratio, which equals 0.5543 , with a p -value of 0.0493 and the correlation between Jensen's alpha and DEA is 0.1538 , but not statistically significant as indicated by a p-value as high as 0.6158 . The correlation between rankings from Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha is very high, which equals 0.8181 , and it is highly significant at $1 \%$ significance level with the p -value equals 0.0006 .

In addition, a recursive model is applied. Regressing DEA scores, Sharpe Ratio and Jensen's Alpha on net expense ratio, price/earnings ratio, market value and book to market ratio respectively using robust-OLS gives the following results. They are indicated as model (1), model (2) and model (3) respectively in Table 5.4.8.

Table 5.4.8 Statistics from the recursive model

| Dependent variables | DEA scores | Sharpe Ratio | Jensen's Alpha |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Factor | Model (1) | Model (2) | Model (3) |
| NER | -0.0511 <br> $(0.743)$ | $0.2049^{* *}$ <br> $(0.042)$ | 8.1751 <br> $(0.243)$ |
| PE | $0.0010^{* * *}$ <br> $(0.005)$ | $0.0010^{* * *}$ <br> $(0.005)$ | 0.0207 <br> $(0.288)$ |
| MV | 0.0006 <br> $(0.739)$ | $0.0018^{* *}$ <br> $(0.039)$ | 0.0437 <br> $(0.380)$ |
| BTM | $1.2107 *$ <br> $(0.067)$ | $1.3077 * * *$ <br> $(0.006)$ | 28.4235 <br> $(0.300)$ |
| R-square | 0.5438 | 0.7914 | 0.3150 |
| F-value | $0.0006^{* * *}$ | $0.0020^{* * *}$ | 0.4232 |
| Note: The quas | () |  |  |

Notes: The quantities in () below estimation coefficients are the corresponding p-values;

$$
* \mathrm{p}<0.1, * * \mathrm{p}<0.05, * * * \mathrm{p}<0.01 .
$$

The results of model (1) indicates that the net expense ratio has a negative impact on the efficiency score indicated by the DEA score as expected, but not statistically significant, with PE ratio, Market value and book to market ratio impact the efficiency score positively, but only the coefficient of the PE ratio is statistically significant. Model (2) gives very good results, in a way that all the coefficients are statistically significant, but the net expense ratio is positively related to the efficiency measure indicated by Sharpe ratio. This maybe because usually better performing fund companies locate their offices in better area which incur higher rents or giving more budget in the advertisement etc. In model (2), the PE ratio, market value, book to market ratio make significant positive contribution to explaining the efficiency indicated by Sharpe ratio, this is consistent with the findings in Stattman (1980) and Rosenberg, Reid, and Lanstein (1985) and Hamao, and Lakonishok (1991) which find that book-to-market ratio makes a positive contribution in explaining the average returns on stocks; and also Basu(1983) which shows that PE ratio are positively related to the average returns of U.S. stocks.

From model (3), all the factors have a positive impact on the efficiency measure indicated by Jensen's Alpha, but none of the coefficients are statistically significant. Also, model (2) shows the highest R-square among those three models, which equals 0.7914 . This means that the model fits well. The prob>F gives the overall significance level of the regression model. Specifically, it indicates the probability of the null hypothesis that all of the regression coefficients are equal to zero is rejected. Model (1) has the smallest prob>F value, which equals 0.0006 ; while that in model (2) is slightly higher, but still highly significant at $1 \%$ significance level.

To illustrate the results better, Figure 5.4.1, Figure 5.4 .2 and Figure 5.4.3 show three models’ forecasting abilities. Line graphs are chosen to give a clear picture about the prediction abilities of the above models to track the actual DEA scores, irrespective of the fact that DEA scores are discrete data. The horizontal axis is the fund number while the vertical axis gives the dependent variable in each model. It can be seen that the prediction from model (2) which is the regression of the Sharpe ratio on net expense ratio, price/earnings ratio, market value and book to market ratio tracks the actual data most closely.


Figure 5.4 . 1 forecasting abilities from recursive model (1)


Figure 5.4.2 forecasting abilities from recursive model (2)


Table 5.4.3 forecasting abilities from recursive model (3)

### 5.5 Conclusion

This application examines two issues, one is to detect the factors influencing the investment trust efficiency utilise second stage DEA models; the other is to compare and rank three investment trust efficiency indicators- DEA score, Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha based on a recursive model.

Firstly of all, six potential factors including Sharpe ratio, Jensen's alpha, net expense ratio, price/earnings ratio, market value and book to market ratio that may have an influence on the investment trusts performance are examined. The efficiency scores of the investment trusts are obtained from a quadratic DEA model with risk as input and mean return as output. Five second stage DEA models- Robust-OLS, three tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge model are applied, and the results show that Sharpe ratio is positively related to the efficiency scores of the investment trusts, Jensen's alpha has a negative impact on the DEA scores, while all other factors contribute very little in explaining the efficiency of the investment trusts. The marginal effects from robust-OLS, Tobit two limit and one limit model are very close, with PW model has similar coefficients with much larger p values. The coefficient from Tobit model with censoring at zero has the opposite sign and different magnitude compared with those from other models. This is due to the difference in modeling. Although it seems only Sharpe ratio contributes significantly to the investment trust efficiency from this application, it may be caused by the fact that there are only one input-risk, one output- return being considered in the DEA program.

In the second part of this application, a recursive model is applied when DEA scores, Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are used as dependent variables respectively while net expense ratio, PE ratio, market value and book to market ratio are explaining factors in all three regressions. The results show that the Sharpe ratio as an efficiency measure can be explained very well by net expense ratio, PE ratio, market value and book to market ratio, while the other two regressions have lower R-squares and insignificant coefficients. Therefore from this recursive model Sharpe ratio is found to be a good efficiency measure considering net expense ratio, PE ratio, market value and book to market ratio as explaining factors. And the results show that the DEA score is worse than Sharpe ratio but better than Jensen's Alpha as efficiency indicator. And another way to improve the modelling is to look for a 'better' range of potential factors which may have impacts on the efficiency of the investment trusts.

Limitations of this empirical work include, firstly, turnover ratio and beta are intended to be included as potential factors, but relevant data cannot be found in the database; secondly the DEA scores as dependent variable are obtained from a quadratic DEA model considering only risk and return. Therefore, the results could be very different if applying linear DEA models with multiple inputs and multiple outputs. All these problems are left for further research.

## Chapter 6 Conclusions

### 6.1 Introduction

Interest in the efficient performance of investment funds has been ongoing for many years, but it is only in the last decade and a half that the topic has been seriously address in the nonparametric performance literature.

The core purpose of this thesis is to apply a quadratic data envelopment analysis model with bootstrap and second stage regression to estimate the efficiency of a sample of investment trusts, obtain the statistical inference of the efficiency scores and detect the determinants of inefficiency. The motivation of this thesis comes from the drawback of the traditional portfolio analysis, which is its sensitivity to chosen benchmarks. For example, the market
portfolio in Capital Asset Pricing Model is an ideal portfolio that only exists in theory. In practice certain indexes are used as approximations, but this causes problems since different indexes are likely to give different results in empirical work. For multi-index models, the difficulties lie in justifying how many and which indexes should be included in the model and defining which category a particular equity belongs to, especially for some equities with properties that suit more than one category. In comparison, the DEA models are practically feasible. In the DEA models, there is no theoretical benchmark like the market portfolio of the CAPM. Instead, the benchmarking fund consists of certain funds in the group, each with a particular weight; rather than being compared with an idealised fund that requires information about all the equities in the market, DEA models benchmark the funds under evaluation against themselves. This makes DEA models practically feasible and easier to test.

The contribution of the first chapter of this thesis is that it applies the procedures in Morey and Morey (1999) to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds and identifies six efficient funds among 29 funds. The relative ranking of all 29 funds are obtained, and the marginal contributions of the mean return and variance in each period to the fund efficiency are examined.

Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA models are particularly chosen because of the unique characteristics of investment trusts. They utilise the insights from Markowitz portfolio theory that there is correlation between different assets which should not be ignored, and these co-movements between different securities affect the relationship between expected return and risk of the combined portfolio. On one hand, the quadratic DEA models Morey and Morey (1999) developed do not completely abandon the traditional portfolio theory but instead relate the non-parametric methodologies to the foundations of traditional performance measurement in mean-variance space. On the other hand the model is derived from the standard data envelopment analysis but differs from it in having non-linear constraints in the envelopment version of the model's structure.

The contribution of the second chapter is that it tested the statistical significance of DEA scores obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) by utilising the Simar-Wilson (2008) bootstrapping algorithms to develop statistical inference and confidence intervals for the indexes of efficient investment fund performance. Algorithms of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model are designed. Biases are corrected, and confidence intervals are
obtained. And the results indicate that even with slight bias, the DEA scores obtained from Morey and Morey (1999) mean augmentation approach are very reliable.

The contribution of the the third chapter in this thesis is that it applies second stage DEA models to analyse the factors contributing to investment trusts performance and detect the determinants of inefficiency. Robust-OLS regression, Tobit models and Papke-Wooldridge (PW) models are conducted and compared to evaluate contextual variables affecting the performance of investment funds. In the first stage, efficiency scores are calculated using Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model, and in the second stage, these scores are regressed on potential explanatory variables including Sharpe ratio, Jensen's alpha, expense ratio, $\mathrm{P} / \mathrm{E}$ ratio, book to market ratio and market value of the investment funds to test the statistical significance of those factors. Only the Sharpe ratio is found to have a significant positive impact on the efficiency score. This may be however, because of the limitations of the dependent variable, which is obtained from a quadratic DEA model only has risk and return in the consideration. Then a recursive model is applied when DEA scores, Sharpe ratio and Jensen's alpha are used as dependent variables respectively while net expense ratio, PE ratio, market value and book to market ratio are explaining factors in all three regressions. The results show that Sharpe ratio is a good efficiency measure considering net expense ratio, PE ratio, market value and book to market ratio as explaining factors. And the DEA score is worse than Sharpe ratio but better than Jensen's Alpha as an efficiency indicator.

### 6.2 Contributions to knowledge

This thesis has five main contributions. Firstly of all, it compares in detail traditional portfolio analysis and DEA models, especially Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic DEA model, in the investment fund evaluation.

Secondly, it applies the procedures in Morey and Morey (1999) to a new modern data set comprising a multi-year sample of investment funds and identifies six efficient funds among 29 funds.

Third, it extends the Morey and Morey (1999) quadratic model by utilising the Simar-Wilson (2008) bootstrapping algorithms to develop statistical inference and confidence intervals for
the indexes of efficient investment fund performance. Algorithms of smoothed bootstrap for this quadratic DEA model are designed.

Fourth, second stage DEA models are applied to analyse the factors contributing to investment trusts performance and detects the determinants of inefficiency. Only one paper has been found in the literature about practices of second stage DEA on investment trusts so far. Therefore, it is very meaningful to examine different potential factors affecting the performance of investment trusts.

Fifth, for the benefit of other researchers, the new Matlab codes designed by the author of the thesis for Morey and Morey (1999) models are presented. With the Matlab codes, not only the results are obtained, but also how this quadratic model is programming could be very clearly seen, with all the details revealed.

## Bibliography

Banker, R. D., Charnes, A., \& Cooper, W. W. (1984) Some models for estimating technical and scale inefficiencies in data envelopment analysis. Management Science, 30(9), 1078-1092.

Banker, R. D., (1993) Maximum Likelihood, consistency and data envelopment analysis: A statistical foundation. Management Science, 39, 1265-1273.

Banker, R. D., Natarajan, R., (2008) Evaluating contextual variables affecting productivity using data envelopment analysis, Operations Research, 56, 48-58.

Banz, Rolf W., (1981) The relationship between return and market value of common stock, Journal of Financial Economics, March, 3-18.

Bhandari, Laxmi, (1988) Debt/Equity Ratio and Expected Stock Re-turns: Empirical Evidence, Journal of Finance, 43, 507-528

Basso, A., \& Funari, S. (2001) A data envelopment analysis approach to measure the mutual fund performance. European Journal of Operational Research, 135(3), 477-492.

Basu, Sanjoy, (1983) The Relationship between Earnings Yield, Market Value and Return for NYSE Common Stocks: Further Evidence, Journal of Financial Economics, 12, 129-156.

Bjurek, H., U. Kjulin and B. Gustafsson, (1992) Efficiency, productivity and determinants of inefficiency at public day care centers in Sweden, Scandinavian Journal of Economics, 94 (Supplement), 173-187.

Bravo-Ureta, B., Solı's, D., Moreira, V., Maripani, J., Thiam, A. and Rivas, T. (2007) Technical efficiency in farming: A meta-regression analysis, Journal of Productivity Analysis, Vol. 27, pp. 57-72.

Briec, W., K. Kerstens, J.-B. Lesourd (2004) Single Period Markowitz Portfolio Selection, Performance Gauging and Duality: A Variation on the Luenberger Shortage Function, Journal of Optimization Theory and Applications, 120, 1-27.

Briec, W., K. Kerstens, and K. O. Jokung (2007) Mean-Variance-Skewness Portfolio Performance Gauging: A General Shortage Function and Dual Approach, Management Science, 53(1), 135-149.

Briec, W., and K. Kerstens (2009) Multi-Horizon Markowitz Portfolio Performance Appraisals : A General Approach, Omega, 37(1), 50-62.

Brown, Stephen J \& Goetzmann, William N, (1995) Performance Persistence, Journal of Finance, American Finance Association, vol. 50(2), 679-98.

Carhart, M. M. (1997). On persistence in mutual fund performance. The Journal of Finance, 52(1), 57-82.

Charnes, A., Cooper, W. W., \& Rhodes, E, (1978) Measuring the efficiency of decision making units. European Journal of Operational Research, 2(6), 429-444.

Chilingerian, J.A., (1995) Evaluating physician efficiency in hospitals: A multivariate analysis of best practices. European Journal of Operational Research, 548-574.

Daraio C \& Simar L., (2006), A robust nonparametric approach to evaluate and explain the performance of mutual funds ,European Journal of Operational Research 175, pp.516-542.

Deprins, D., Simar, L., and Tulkens, H. (1984) Measuring Labor Inefficiency in Post Offices, in Marchand, M., Pestieau, P. and Tulkens, H. (eds.) The Performance of Public Enterprizes: Concepts and Measurements, 243-267.

Efron, B. (1979) Bootstrap methods; another look at the jackknife. Ann Statist, 7, 1-26.
Efron, B. (1982) The Jackknife, the Bootstrap, and Other Resampling Plans. Number 38 in CBMS-NSF Regional Conference SSeries in AppliedMathematics. Philadelphia: SIAM

Efron, B. \& R.J. Tibshirani, An Introduction to the Bootstrap, Chapman and Hall, London, 1993.

Elton, Edwin J., Martin J. Gruber, Sanjiv Das, and Matt Hlavka, (1993) Efficiency with costly information: A re-interpretation of evidence from managed portfolios, Review of Financial Studies 6, 1-21.

Fama, E. F. (1972). Components of investment performance. The Journal of Finance, 27(3), 551-567.
Fama, E. F., \& French, K. R. (1992). The cross-section of expected stock returns. The Journal of Finance, 47(2), 427-465.

Fama, E. F., \& French, K. R. (1993). Common risk factors in the returns on stocks and bonds. Journal of Financial Economics, 33(1), 3-56.

Ferson, W. E., \& Schadt, R. W. (1996). Measuring fund strategy and performance in changing economic conditions. The Journal of Finance, 51(2), 425-461.

Fethi, M.D., Jackson, P.M., Weyman-Jones, T.G., (2002). Measuring the efficiency of European airlines: An application of DEA and tobit analyses. Discussion Paper, University of Leicester.

Forsund, F.R., (1999) The Evolution of DEA - The Economics Perspective, Working Paper, University of Oslo, Norway.

Galagedera U.A \& Silvapulle P. (2002) Australian mutual fund performance appraisal using data envelopment analysis, Managerial Finance 28, pp. 60-73

Gijbels, I., Hall, P. and Kneip, A. (1999) On the estimation of jump points in smooth curves. Annals of the Institute of Statistical Mathematics 51, 231-251.

Gillen, D.W., Lall, A., (1997) Developing measures of airport productivity and performance: an application of data envelopment analysis. Transportation Research, Part E 33 (4), 261-274.

Glawischnig, M., \& Sommersguter-Reichmann, M. (2010) Assessing the performance of alternative investments using non-parametric efficiency measurement approaches: Is it convincing? Journal of Banking \& Finance, 34(2), 295-303.

Goetzmann, William N., and Zheng, Su. (2006) The Equity Mutual Fund Portfolio, Yale University Working Paper.

Gstach, D. (1998) Another approach to data envelopment analysis in noisy environments: DEA+. Journal of Productivity Analysis 9:161-176.

Greene, W. H. (1993) Frontier Production Functions, EC-93-20. Stern School of Business, New York University.

Hoff, A., (2007) Second stage DEA: Comparison of approaches for modelling the DEA score, European Journal of Operational Research. 181, 425-435.

Jegadeesh, N. and S. Titman, (1993) Returns to buying winners and selling losers: Implications for stock market efficiency, Journal of Finance, 48, 65-91.

Chan, L, Y. Haomao and J. Lakonishok, 1991, Fundamentals and Stock Returns in Japan. Journal of Finance 46, 1739-1764.

Haslem, J. A., \& Scheraga, C. A. (2003) Data envelopment analysis of Morningstar’ s largecap mutual funds, The Journal of Investing, 12, 41-48.

Haslem, J. A., \& Scheraga, C. A. (2006) Data envelopment analysis of Morningstar' s small cap mutual funds. Journal of Investing, 15(1), 87-92.

Henriksson, R. D., \& Merton, R. C (1981) On market timing and investment performance. I. An Equilibrium Theory of Value for Market Forecasts. The Journal of Business, 54(3), 303406.

Henriksson, R. D., \& Merton, R. C. (1981) On market timing and investment performance. II. statistical procedures for evaluating forecasting skills. The Journal of Business, 54(4), 513533.

Henriksson, R. D. (1984). Market timing and mutual fund performance: An empirical investigation. The Journal of Business, 57(1, Part 1), 73-96.
H. Tulkens, On FDH E $\pm$ ciency Analysis: Some Methodological Issues and Applications to Retail Banking, Courts, and Urban Transit, The Journal of Productivity Analysis, 4, 183-210, 1993.

John, M. (2009) Using least squares and tobit in second stage DEA efficiency analyses. European Journal of Operational Research, 197(2), 792-798.

Jegadeesh, N., \& Titman, S. (1993). Returns to buying winners and selling losers: Implications for stock market efficiency. The Journal of Finance, 48(1), 65-91

Jensen, M. C. (1968). The performance of mutual funds in the period 1945-1964. The Journal of Finance, 23(2, Papers and Proceedings of the Twenty-Sixth Annual Meeting of the American Finance Association Washington, D.C. December 28-30, 1967), 389-416.

Jensen, Michael C. (1972) Optimal utilization of market forecasts and the evaluation of investment performance. Mathematical methods in Finance, Working paper

Kerstens, K., Woestyne, I.V.D (2011) Negative data in DEA: a simple proportional distance function approach. JORS 1413-1419

Kirjavainen T and HA Loikkanen (1998) Efficiency Differences of Finnish Senior Secondary Schools: An Application of DEA and Tobit Analysis. Economics of Education Review 17(4): 377-394.

Kerstens, K., Mounir, A., \& Van de Woestyne, I. (2011) Non-parametric frontier estimates of mutual fund performance using C- and L-moments: Some specification tests. Journal of Banking \& Finance, 35, 1190-1201.

Kerstens, K., \& Van de Woestyne, I. (2011) Negative data in DEA: A simple proportional distance function approach. Journal of the Operational Research Society, 62(7), 1413-1419.

Kneip, A., Park, B.U. and L. Simar. (1996) A Note on the Convergence of Nonparametric DEA Efficiency Estimates, CORE, Discussion Paper 9603, Center for Operations Research and Econometrics, Universite Catholique de Louvain.

Kneip, A., Simar, L., and Wilson, P.W. (2003), Asymptotics for DEA estimators in nonparametric frontier models, Discussion paper \#0317, Institut de Statistique, Universit'e Catholique de Louvain, Louvain-la-Neuve, Belgium.

Korostelev, A., L. Simar, and A. B. Tsybakov (1995a), Efficient estimation of monotone boundaries, The Annals of Statistics 23, 476-489.

- (1995b), On estimation of monotone and convex boundaries, Publications de l'Institut de Statistique de l'Universit'e de Paris XXXIX 1, 3-18.

Latruffe, L., Balcombe, K., Davidova, S. and Zawalinska, K. (2004) Determinants of Technical Efficiency of Crop and Livestock Farms in Poland. Applied Economics 36(12), 1255-1263.

Lozano, S., \& Gutiérrez, E. (2008) Data envelopment analysis of mutual funds based on second-order stochastic dominance. European Journal of Operational Research, 189(1), 230244.

Luenberger, D. G., (1995) Microeconomic Theory, McGraw Hill, New York, NY
Luoma, K., M-L. Järviö, I. Suoniemi, R.T. Hjerppe. (1996) Financial incentives and productive efficiency in Finnish health centers. Health Economics 5, 435-445.

Malkiel, Burton G. (1995) Returns from Investing in Equity Mutual Funds 1971 to 1991, Journal of Finance, June, 50:2, 549-72.

Markowitz, H, (1952) Portfolio selection, Journal of Finance, 7(1), 77-91.
McDonald, J. F., \& Moffitt, R. A. (1980) The uses of tobit analysis. Review of Economics \& Statistics, 62(2), 318-321.

Morey, M. R., \& Morey, R. C. (1999) Mutual fund performance appraisals: A multi-horizon perspective with endogenous benchmarking. Omega, 27(2), 241-258.

Merton, R.C. (1981) On market timing and investment performance. I, An equilibrium theory of value for market forecasts. Journal of Business 54 (July): 363-406.

Murthi, B. P. S., Choi, Y. K., \& Desai, P. (1997) Efficiency of mutual funds and portfolio performance measurement: A non-parametric approach. European Journal of Operational Research, 98(2), 408-418.

Oum, T.H. and C. Yu (2004), Measuring Airports Operating Efficiency: A Summary of the 2003 ATRS Global Airport Benchmarking Report, Transportation Research E, 40, 515-532.

Papke L. E, Wooldridge J. M (1996) Econometric methods for fractional response variables with an application to $401(\mathrm{k})$ plan participation rates. Journal of Applied Econometrics 11: 619-632.

Pleiderer, P. and Bhattacharya, S. (1983): A Note on Performance Evaluation, Working Paper, Stanford University.

Premachandra, I. M., J. G. Powell, and J. Shi (1998) Measuring the Relative Efficiency of Fund Management Strategies in New Zealand Using a Spreadsheet-based Stochastic Data Envelopment Analysis Model, Omega, 26(2), 319-331.

Ray, S. C. (1991). Resource-use efficiency in public schools: A study of connecticut data, Management Science, 37(12), 1620-1628.

Rosenberg B, Reid K, Lanstein R (1985) Persuasive evidence of market inefficiency. Journal of Portfolio Management, 11(3):9-16.

Richard Roll (1978), Ambiguity when Performance is Measured by the Securities Market Line, The Journal of Finance, Volume 33, Issue 4, 1051-1069.

Ross, S. A., (1976) The arbitrage theory of capital asset pricing, Journal of Economic Theory, Vol.13, 341-360.

Ruggiero, J., Vitaliano, D.F., (1999) Assessing the efficiency of public schools using data envelopment analysis and frontier regression. Contemporary Economic Policy, 17 (3), 321331.

Sengupta J. (2003) Efficiency tests for mutual fund portfolios, Applied Financial Economics 13, pp. 869-876

Sharpe, W. F. (1992). Asset allocation: Management style and performance measurement. Journal of Portfolio Management, 18(2), 7-19.

Sharpe, W. F. (1995). The styles and performance of large seasoned U.S. mutual funds, 19851994.working paper, Stanford University

Sharpe, W. F. (1966). Mutual fund performance. The Journal of Business, 39(1, Part 2: Supplement on Security Prices), 119-138.

Silverman, B.W., Density Estimation for Statistics and Data Analysis, Chapman and Halll, London, 1986

Silverman, B.W., \& Young, G. A. (1987) The bootstrap: To smooth or not to smooth? Biometrika, 74(3), 469-479.

Simar, L. (1992) Estimating efficiencies from frontier models with panel data: a comparison of parametric, non-parametric and semiparametric methods with bootstrapping, Journal of Productivity Analysis, 3, 167-203.

Simar, L \& Wilson, P W (1998a) Productivity Growth in Industrialized Countries, CORE Discussion Papers 1998036, Université catholique de Louvain, Center for Operations Research and Econometrics (CORE).

Simar, L., \& Wilson, P. W. (1998) Sensitivity analysis of efficiency scores: How to bootstrap in nonparametric frontier models. Management Science, 44(1), 49-61.

Simar, L. \& Wilson, P.W. (2000) Statistical Inference in Nonparametric Frontier Models: the State of the Art. Journal of Productivity Analysis, 13(1), 49-78

Simar, L. \& Wilson, P.W. (2000) A General Methodology for Bootstrapping in Nonparametric Frontier Models, Journal of Applied Statistics, 27(6), 779-802

Simar, L., \& Wilson, P. W. (2002) Non-parametric tests of returns to scale, European Journal of Operational Research, 139, 115-132.

Simar, L., \& Wilson, P. W. (2007) Estimation and inference in two-stage, semi-parametric models of production processes, Journal of Econometrics, 136(1), 31-64.

Simar, L. \& Wilson, P.W., Statistical Inference in Nonparametric Frontier Models: Recent Developments and Perspectives. The Measurement of Productive Efficiency and Productivity Growth, Oxford, 2008.

Stattman, Dennis, (1980) Book values and stock returns, The Chicago MBA: A Journal of Selected Papers 4, 25-45.

Treynor, J. L. (1965). How to rate management of investment funds, Harvard Business Review, 43(1), 63-75.

Treynor, J. L., \& Mazuy, K. K. (1966) Can mutual funds outguess the market? Harvard Business Review, 44(4), 131-136.

Tsolas I (2011) Modelling profitability and effectiveness of Greek-listed construction firms: An integrated DEA and ratio analysis, Construction Management and Economics 29(8): 795-807.

Vanden Eckaut, P., H. Tulkens, and M.A. Jamar, (1993) Cost Efficiency in Belgian Municipalities, in H.O. Fried, C.A.K. Lovell, and S.S. Schmidt, eds., The Measurement of Productive Efficiency (New York: Oxford University Press).

Vestergaard, N., Hoff, A., Andersen, J.L., Lindebo, E., Gronbaek, L., (2002) Measuring capacity in fishing industries using the data envelopment (DEA) approach. Final Country Report: Denmark, EU-Study 99/005.

Viitala, E. and H. Hanninen.(1998) Measuring the efficiency of public forestry organizations. Forest Science 44 (2): 298 - 307.

## Appendix A: Covariance matrix in Chapter 3

## 3-year covariance

Columns 1 through 16

| 43.4799 | 33.7459 | 33.7972 | 47.0919 | 31.0737 | 34.7373 | 34.6697 | 35.9146 | 35.9078 | 38.2330 | 34.1033 | 35.5538 | 31.4586 | 30.0476 | 33.6165 | 47.5488 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 33.7459 | 29.3560 | 29.3902 | 37.4539 | 26.0108 | 29.0294 | 28.9621 | 29.9995 | 29.9897 | 31.8721 | 27.5858 | 29.1372 | 26.1404 | 24.1238 | 26.8391 | 37.9503 |
| 33.7972 | 29.3902 | 29.4252 | 37.5104 | 26.0413 | 29.0683 | 29.0009 | 30.0366 | 30.0268 | 31.9042 | 27.6316 | 29.1763 | 26.1780 | 24.1632 | 26.8833 | 38.0137 |
| 47.0919 | 37.4539 | 37.5104 | 53.5373 | 34.6125 | 38.2399 | 38.1443 | 39.2622 | 39.2517 | 42.0104 | 37.3252 | 39.2720 | 34.5390 | 32.8421 | 36.8050 | 51.9480 |
| 31.0737 | 26.0108 | 26.0413 | 34.6125 | 25.4702 | 26.4914 | 26.4224 | 27.3226 | 27.3153 | 29.3508 | 25.1598 | 26.8605 | 23.6398 | 22.6085 | 25.2592 | 34.8759 |
| 34.7373 | 29.0294 | 29.0683 | 38.2399 | 26.4914 | 30.1008 | 30.0317 | 30.9300 | 30.9191 | 32.1904 | 28.5133 | 29.8853 | 26.6538 | 24.6984 | 27.6049 | 39.3626 |
| 34.6697 | 28.9621 | 29.0009 | 38.1443 | 26.4224 | 30.0317 | 29.9638 | 30.8605 | 30.8497 | 32.1328 | 28.4409 | 29.8116 | 26.5883 | 24.6409 | 27.5405 | 39.2723 |
| 35.9146 | 29.9995 | 30.0366 | 39.2622 | 27.3226 | 30.9300 | 30.8605 | 32.1390 | 32.1278 | 33.2567 | 29.3045 | 30.9262 | 27.6929 | 25.6003 | 28.5895 | 40.6889 |
| 35.9078 | 29.9897 | 30.0268 | 39.2517 | 27.3153 | 30.9191 | 30.8497 | 32.1278 | 32.1167 | 33.2448 | 29.3013 | 30.9170 | 27.6832 | 25.5947 | 28.5837 | 40.6803 |
| 38.2330 | 31.8721 | 31.9042 | 42.0104 | 29.3508 | 32.1904 | 32.1328 | 33.2567 | 33.2448 | 36.6318 | 30.2582 | 32.1287 | 28.5644 | 27.1290 | 30.1756 | 41.9106 |
| 34.1033 | 27.5858 | 27.6316 | 37.3252 | 25.1598 | 28.5133 | 28.4409 | 29.3045 | 29.3013 | 30.2582 | 28.2562 | 29.0376 | 25.8427 | 24.0897 | 27.0702 | 38.7869 |
| 35.5538 | 29.1372 | 29.1763 | 39.2720 | 26.8605 | 29.8853 | 29.8116 | 30.9262 | 30.9170 | 32.1287 | 29.0376 | 30.8515 | 27.3467 | 25.5539 | 28.5264 | 40.4697 |
| 31.4586 | 26.1404 | 26.1780 | 34.5390 | 23.6398 | 26.6538 | 26.5883 | 27.6929 | 27.6832 | 28.5644 | 25.8427 | 27.3467 | 24.8915 | 22.6551 | 25.3525 | 36.1754 |
| 30.0476 | 24.1238 | 24.1632 | 32.8421 | 22.6085 | 24.6984 | 24.6409 | 25.6003 | 25.5947 | 27.1290 | 24.0897 | 25.5539 | 22.6551 | 23.4065 | 25.7194 | 33.8119 |
| 33.6165 | 26.8391 | 26.8833 | 36.8050 | 25.2592 | 27.6049 | 27.5405 | 28.5895 | 28.5837 | 30.1756 | 27.0702 | 28.5264 | 25.3525 | 25.7194 | 28.5594 | 37.9705 |
| 47.5488 | 37.9503 | 38.0137 | 51.9480 | 34.8759 | 39.3626 | 39.2723 | 40.6889 | 40.6803 | 41.9106 | 38.7869 | 40.4697 | 36.1754 | 33.8119 | 37.9705 | 55.6349 |
| 44.6263 | 35.3130 | 35.3625 | 49.1692 | 32.6533 | 36.1755 | 36.0986 | 37.3361 | 37.3267 | 39.6733 | 35.3604 | 37.0258 | 32.9297 | 30.7982 | 34.7294 | 49.2747 |
| 44.0397 | 35.7253 | 35.7681 | 49.3042 | 33.3450 | 36.5037 | 36.4198 | 37.6316 | 37.6244 | 40.0408 | 35.5939 | 37.3192 | 33.6497 | 31.0380 | 35.2535 | 49.7274 |


| 44.3834 | 36.0196 | 36.0683 | 49.7073 | 33.7082 | 36.9043 | 36.8212 | 37.9570 | 37.9498 | 40.4882 | 35.9948 | 37.6815 | 33.9311 | 31.4737 | 35.7547 | 50.4044 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 33.2435 | 29.2350 | 29.2603 | 38.3103 | 25.8612 | 29.3901 | 29.3291 | 30.2594 | 30.2431 | 31.6129 | 28.1104 | 29.0262 | 27.1057 | 23.1348 | 26.7155 | 39.3068 |
| 41.8842 | 35.0440 | 35.0786 | 45.8070 | 31.8882 | 35.7281 | 35.6567 | 36.8699 | 36.8637 | 39.4329 | 34.2135 | 35.4242 | 31.8721 | 29.5890 | 33.2154 | 47.8002 |
| 41.8862 | 35.0475 | 35.0822 | 45.8072 | 31.8896 | 35.7281 | 35.6568 | 36.8716 | 36.8654 | 39.4378 | 34.2127 | 35.4220 | 31.8739 | 29.5905 | 33.2188 | 47.7987 |
| 49.3605 | 39.3941 | 39.4507 | 55.0316 | 36.3264 | 40.0833 | 39.9812 | 41.2229 | 41.2113 | 43.5973 | 39.3410 | 41.0410 | 36.2099 | 34.3355 | 38.6100 | 54.4788 |
| 56.4330 | 45.9055 | 45.9560 | 61.8529 | 43.2560 | 46.9038 | 46.7981 | 48.6942 | 48.6851 | 51.7910 | 45.3346 | 47.7284 | 42.8083 | 40.2938 | 45.1478 | 63.3570 |
| 56.4002 | 45.8882 | 45.9386 | 61.8131 | 43.2353 | 46.8800 | 46.7745 | 48.6714 | 48.6625 | 51.7605 | 45.3183 | 47.7068 | 42.7919 | 40.2704 | 45.1212 | 63.3323 |
| 43.0116 | 35.4712 | 35.5085 | 46.9729 | 32.5095 | 36.1703 | 36.0900 | 37.6348 | 37.6235 | 39.7982 | 34.5670 | 36.4151 | 32.9677 | 30.0979 | 33.6678 | 47.6097 |
| 42.9707 | 35.4446 | 35.4820 | 46.9187 | 32.4764 | 36.1434 | 36.0630 | 37.6057 | 37.5944 | 39.7575 | 34.5494 | 36.3868 | 32.9449 | 30.0728 | 33.6402 | 47.5785 |
| 60.4018 | 49.6081 | 49.6798 | 68.9900 | 46.7514 | 50.1040 | 49.9873 | 51.5409 | 51.5229 | 55.4410 | 48.2733 | 51.1226 | 45.9120 | 42.6306 | 48.5075 | 69.1249 |
| 60.4242 | 49.6167 | 49.6883 | 69.0405 | 46.7538 | 50.1240 | 50.0068 | 51.5539 | 51.5358 | 55.4445 | 48.2950 | 51.1485 | 45.9145 | 42.6488 | 48.5222 | 69.1421 |

Columns 17 through 29

| 44.6263 | 44.0397 | 44.3834 | 33.2435 | 41.8842 | 41.8862 | 49.3605 | 56.4330 | 56.4002 | 43.0116 | 42.9707 | 60.4018 | 60.4242 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 35.3130 | 35.7253 | 36.0196 | 29.2350 | 35.0440 | 35.0475 | 39.3941 | 45.9055 | 45.8882 | 35.4712 | 35.4446 | 49.6081 | 49.6167 |
| 35.3625 | 35.7681 | 36.0683 | 29.2603 | 35.0786 | 35.0822 | 39.4507 | 45.9560 | 45.9386 | 35.5085 | 35.4820 | 49.6798 | 49.6883 |
| 49.1692 | 49.3042 | 49.7073 | 38.3103 | 45.8070 | 45.8072 | 55.0316 | 61.8529 | 61.8131 | 46.9729 | 46.9187 | 68.9900 | 69.0405 |
| 32.6533 | 33.3450 | 33.7082 | 25.8612 | 31.8882 | 31.8896 | 36.3264 | 43.2560 | 43.2353 | 32.5095 | 32.4764 | 46.7514 | 46.7538 |
| 36.1755 | 36.5037 | 36.9043 | 29.3901 | 35.7281 | 35.7281 | 40.0833 | 46.9038 | 46.8800 | 36.1703 | 36.1434 | 50.1040 | 50.1240 |
| 36.0986 | 36.4198 | 36.8212 | 29.3291 | 35.6567 | 35.6568 | 39.9812 | 46.7981 | 46.7745 | 36.0900 | 36.0630 | 49.9873 | 50.0068 |
| 37.3361 | 37.6316 | 37.9570 | 30.2594 | 36.8699 | 36.8716 | 41.2229 | 48.6942 | 48.6714 | 37.6348 | 37.6057 | 51.5409 | 51.5539 |
| 37.3267 | 37.6244 | 37.9498 | 30.2431 | 36.8637 | 36.8654 | 41.2113 | 48.6851 | 48.6625 | 37.6235 | 37.5944 | 51.5229 | 51.5358 |
| 39.6733 | 40.0408 | 40.4882 | 31.6129 | 39.4329 | 39.4378 | 43.5973 | 51.7910 | 51.7605 | 39.7982 | 39.7575 | 55.4410 | 55.4445 |
| 35.3604 | 35.5939 | 35.9948 | 28.1104 | 34.2135 | 34.2127 | 39.3410 | 45.3346 | 45.3183 | 34.5670 | 34.5494 | 48.2733 | 48.2950 |
| 37.0258 | 37.3192 | 37.6815 | 29.0262 | 35.4242 | 35.4220 | 41.0410 | 47.7284 | 47.7068 | 36.4151 | 36.3868 | 51.1226 | 51.1485 |


| 32.9297 | 33.6497 | 33.9311 | 27.1057 | 31.8721 | 31.8739 | 36.2099 | 42.8083 | 42.7919 | 32.9677 | 32.9449 | 45.9120 | 45.9145 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 30.7982 | 31.0380 | 31.4737 | 23.1348 | 29.5890 | 29.5905 | 34.3355 | 40.2938 | 40.2704 | 30.0979 | 30.0728 | 42.6306 | 42.6488 |
| 34.7294 | 35.2535 | 35.7547 | 26.7155 | 33.2154 | 33.2188 | 38.6100 | 45.1478 | 45.1212 | 33.6678 | 33.6402 | 48.5075 | 48.5222 |
| 49.2747 | 49.7274 | 50.4044 | 39.3068 | 47.8002 | 47.7987 | 54.4788 | 63.3570 | 63.3323 | 47.6097 | 47.5785 | 69.1249 | 69.1421 |
| 46.7077 | 46.6602 | 46.9879 | 36.1467 | 43.6201 | 43.6261 | 51.5953 | 59.1209 | 59.0898 | 44.9201 | 44.8751 | 64.3494 | 64.3617 |
| 46.6602 | 50.7876 | 51.2132 | 38.5284 | 44.9278 | 44.9401 | 51.2092 | 61.2257 | 61.1799 | 45.9585 | 45.9241 | 69.1509 | 69.1453 |
| 46.9879 | 51.2132 | 51.8278 | 38.6181 | 45.4357 | 45.4485 | 51.5363 | 61.5342 | 61.4880 | 46.1404 | 46.1061 | 69.7926 | 69.7865 |
| 36.1467 | 38.5284 | 38.6181 | 41.2744 | 36.6989 | 36.7116 | 40.1834 | 47.0213 | 46.9964 | 35.9281 | 35.9055 | 56.2517 | 56.2380 |
| 43.6201 | 44.9278 | 45.4357 | 36.6989 | 46.4054 | 46.4108 | 48.1801 | 57.1465 | 57.1238 | 43.6202 | 43.5887 | 63.3895 | 63.3837 |
| 43.6261 | 44.9401 | 45.4485 | 36.7116 | 46.4108 | 46.4165 | 48.1870 | 57.1512 | 57.1285 | 43.6246 | 43.5931 | 63.4033 | 63.3972 |
| 51.5953 | 51.2092 | 51.5363 | 40.1834 | 48.1801 | 48.1870 | 58.5356 | 64.4491 | 64.4114 | 49.0247 | 48.9739 | 72.1247 | 72.1588 |
| 59.1209 | 61.2257 | 61.5342 | 47.0213 | 57.1465 | 57.1512 | 64.4491 | 79.6227 | 79.5903 | 59.3750 | 59.3326 | 83.6659 | 83.6508 |
| 59.0898 | 61.1799 | 61.4880 | 46.9964 | 57.1238 | 57.1285 | 64.4114 | 79.5903 | 79.5592 | 59.3546 | 59.3123 | 83.6020 | 83.5866 |
| 44.9201 | 45.9585 | 46.1404 | 35.9281 | 43.6202 | 43.6246 | 49.0247 | 59.3750 | 59.3546 | 46.0424 | 46.0024 | 61.8121 | 61.8114 |
| 44.8751 | 45.9241 | 46.1061 | 35.9055 | 43.5887 | 43.5931 | 48.9739 | 59.3326 | 59.3123 | 46.0024 | 45.9629 | 61.7519 | 61.7510 |
| 64.3494 | 69.1509 | 69.7926 | 56.2517 | 63.3895 | 63.4033 | 72.1247 | 83.6659 | 83.6020 | 61.8121 | 61.7519 | 103.6475 | 103.6304 |
| 64.3617 | 69.1453 | 69.7865 | 56.2380 | 63.3837 | 63.3972 | 72.1588 | 83.6508 | 83.5866 | 61.8114 | 61.7510 | 103.6304 | 103.6156 |

## 5-year covariance

Columns 1 through 16
$\begin{array}{lllllllllllllllllllll}34.9157 & 25.7203 & 25.7541 & 34.7696 & 24.1673 & 26.4039 & 26.3469 & 27.5446 & 27.5305 & 28.4665 & 26.8381 & 28.3109 & 24.8660 & 23.8727 & 26.3676 & 35.8785\end{array}$

| 25.7203 | 22.9126 | 22.9339 | 27.6696 | 20.2759 | 22.1651 | 22.1055 | 23.1258 | 23.1175 | 24.4038 | 21.332 | 22.6144 | 20.3527 | 18.7310 | 20.6381 | 28.2464 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 25.754 | 22.933 | 22.9558 | 27.7045 | 20.2943 | 22. |  | 23. | 23.1398 |  |  |  | 20.3779 | 18.7556 | 20.6658 | 28.2870 |
| 3 | 27.6 | 27.704 | 38.046 | 25. | 27 | 27 | 28 | 28 | 30. |  | 29.3369 | 25.7061 | 24 | 26 | 37.0802 |
| 24.16 | 20.2 | 20.2 | 25 | 20. | 20. | 20 |  |  |  |  |  |  | 18 | 20.2418 | 26.5687 |
| 2 | 22 | 22 | 27 | 20 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 20.5283 |  | 2 |  |
| 26 | 22 | 22 | 27 | 20. |  |  |  |  |  |  | 22 | 20.4729 | 19.3192 | 21.3104 | 2 |
| 2 | 23 |  | 28 | 21 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 27.5 | 23 | 23 | 28. | 21. | 23 | 23 | 24 | 2 | 25 | 22 | 2 | 21.5272 | 20.2384 | 22.2949 | 30.2049 |
| 28.4 | 24. |  | 30 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 22 | 30.8475 |
| 2 | 21.33 | 21 | 27 | 19 | 21 | 21 | 22 | 22 | 23 | 2 | 2 | 20.3016 | 19.1375 | 2 | 8 |
| 28.3 | 22.6 | 22 | 29.3 | 21 | 22 | 22 |  | 2 | 24.2500 |  | 2 | 21.7831 | 20 | 22 | 7 |
| 2 | 20 | 20 | 25 | 18 | 20 | 20 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 20.3016 | 2 | ) | 18.1157 | 2 | 9 |
| 23.8 | 18 | 18 | 24 | 18 |  |  | 20 | 20 |  | 19.1375 | 20.3 | 18.1157 | 19.1263 | 20.8307 | 25.7911 |
| 2 | 20 | 20 | 26 | 20 | 21 | 21 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 20.0142 | 20.8307 | 22.9026 | 1 |
| 35.878 | 28.246 | 28.287 | 37.080 | 26.56 | 29.0 | 28.9 | 30.2 | 30.2 | 30.8 | 29.2348 | 30.6777 | 27.3489 | 25.79 | 28.7091 | 40.8304 |
| 3 | 26 | 26 | 35 | 2 | 26 | 26 | 27 |  | 2 |  | 2 | 25.1476 | 23.5188 | 3 | 36.1647 |
| 32.395 | 27.207 | 27.229 | 35.173 | 25.423 | 27.2 | 27 | 28 | 28. | 30.2 | 26.6742 | 27 | 25 | 23.5236 | 26.3950 | 36.0634 |
| 32 | 27 | 27 | 35 | 25 | 27 | 27 |  |  | 30 | 26.8956 | 27.9152 | 25.1779 | 23.7594 | 26.6676 | 36.4459 |
| 26.050 | 22.5372 | 22.547 | 27.739 | 20.992 | 22.528 | 22 | 23 | 23 | 24. | 22.2076 | 22.35 | 20.7924 | 19.1950 | 21.7773 | 29.8010 |
| 29.992 | 26.120 | 26.138 | 32 | 24.0 | 26.21 | 26.15 | 27.245 | 27.2 | 29. | 24.9987 | 25.9453 | 23.5 | 22.3737 | 24.8640 | 33.9959 |
| 29.9886 | 26.113 | 26.131 | 32.0 | 24.0 | 26.20 | 26.1 | 27.2 | 27.241 | 29 | 24.9928 | 25.935 | 23.5198 | 22.3685 | 24.8594 | 33.9869 |
| 37.6140 | 29.414 | 29.4522 | 39.766 | 27.06 | 29.53 | 29.456 | 30.691 | 30.676 | 31.8850 | 29.6363 | 31.466 | 27.5525 | 25.8918 | 28.7671 | 39.6927 |
| 40.9496 | 33.3395 | 33.3702 | 43.0428 | 31.563 | 33.664 | 33.5812 | 35.0848 | 35.075 | 37.3524 | 33.1085 | 34.7146 | 31.1159 | 29.584 | 32.8685 | 45.0776 |
| 40.9335 | 33.3419 | 33.3726 | 43.0262 | 31.560 | 33.6636 | 33.5799 | 35.0853 | 35.0759 | 37.3469 | 33.1062 | 34.7094 | 31.1145 | 29.5806 | 32.8621 | 45.0699 |
| 32.1393 | 26.9686 | 26.9918 | 33.7547 | 24.9055 | 26.9659 | 26.8983 | 28.2600 | 28.2512 | 29.7093 | 26.1356 | 27.6259 | 25.0414 | 23.2325 | 25.7331 | 34.9601 |
| 32.1051 | 26.9520 | 26.9753 | 33.7099 | 24.8884 | 26.9504 | 26.8828 | 28.2421 | 28.2335 | 29.6835 | 26.1194 | 27.6025 | 25.0292 | 23.2157 | 25.7153 | 34.9403 |



```
44.7890
```

Columns 17 through 29

| 34.1131 | 32.3953 | 32.5714 | 26.0501 | 29.9927 | 29.9886 | 37.6140 | 40.9496 | 40.9335 | 32.1393 | 32.1051 | 44.7849 | 44.7890 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 26.5978 | 27.2077 | 27.3846 | 22.5372 | 26.1207 | 26.1139 | 29.4147 | 33.3395 | 33.3419 | 26.9686 | 26.9520 | 36.7480 | 36.7482 |
| 26.6307 | 27.2296 | 27.4100 | 22.5473 | 26.1382 | 26.1315 | 29.4522 | 33.3702 | 33.3726 | 26.9918 | 26.9753 | 36.7917 | 36.7919 |
| 35.7248 | 35.1737 | 35.4104 | 27.7398 | 32.0877 | 32.0783 | 39.7665 | 43.0428 | 43.0262 | 33.7547 | 33.7099 | 48.7672 | 48.7915 |
| 24.6645 | 25.4236 | 25.6249 | 20.9922 | 24.0955 | 24.0873 | 27.0684 | 31.5631 | 31.5601 | 24.9055 | 24.8884 | 34.7268 | 34.7297 |
| 26.8544 | 27.2725 | 27.4976 | 22.5289 | 26.2117 | 26.2055 | 29.5344 | 33.6649 | 33.6636 | 26.9659 | 26.9504 | 36.8652 | 36.8745 |
| 26.7911 | 27.2008 | 27.4262 | 22.4720 | 26.1504 | 26.1444 | 29.4562 | 33.5812 | 33.5799 | 26.8983 | 26.8828 | 36.7718 | 36.7808 |
| 27.9558 | 28.2810 | 28.4674 | 23.3051 | 27.2458 | 27.2398 | 30.6910 | 35.0848 | 35.0853 | 28.2600 | 28.2421 | 38.1793 | 38.1847 |
| 27.9424 | 28.2745 | 28.4611 | 23.2945 | 27.2477 | 27.2416 | 30.6764 | 35.0753 | 35.0759 | 28.2512 | 28.2335 | 38.1668 | 38.1722 |
| 29.2166 | 30.2837 | 30.5398 | 24.8541 | 29.0664 | 29.0621 | 31.8850 | 37.3524 | 37.3469 | 29.7093 | 29.6835 | 40.7457 | 40.7477 |
| 26.8864 | 26.6742 | 26.8956 | 22.2076 | 24.9987 | 24.9928 | 29.6363 | 33.1085 | 33.1062 | 26.1356 | 26.1194 | 35.8750 | 35.8803 |
| 28.4973 | 27.7083 | 27.9152 | 22.3530 | 25.9453 | 25.9358 | 31.4668 | 34.7146 | 34.7094 | 27.6259 | 27.6025 | 38.0448 | 38.0532 |
| 25.1476 | 25.0216 | 25.1779 | 20.7924 | 23.5261 | 23.5198 | 27.5525 | 31.1159 | 31.1145 | 25.0414 | 25.0292 | 34.1189 | 34.1152 |
| 23.5188 | 23.5236 | 23.7594 | 19.1950 | 22.3737 | 22.3685 | 25.8918 | 29.5844 | 29.5806 | 23.2325 | 23.2157 | 32.0643 | 32.0736 |
| 26.1863 | 26.3950 | 26.6676 | 21.7773 | 24.8640 | 24.8594 | 28.7671 | 32.8685 | 32.8621 | 25.7331 | 25.7153 | 35.9865 | 35.9939 |
| 36.1647 | 36.0634 | 36.4459 | 29.8010 | 33.9959 | 33.9869 | 39.6927 | 45.0776 | 45.0699 | 34.9601 | 34.9403 | 49.6233 | 49.6291 |
| 34.7964 | 33.8996 | 34.0850 | 27.0009 | 30.9851 | 30.9806 | 38.2784 | 42.0289 | 42.0175 | 32.9492 | 32.9109 | 46.5067 | 46.5061 |
| 33.8996 | 37.6913 | 37.9399 | 29.6546 | 33.0059 | 33.0043 | 36.7859 | 43.4589 | 43.4451 | 33.9141 | 33.8939 | 49.6020 | 49.5980 |
| 34.0850 | 37.9399 | 38.3051 | 29.6735 | 33.3124 | 33.3111 | 36.9721 | 43.6242 | 43.6103 | 34.0128 | 33.9926 | 49.9503 | 49.9460 |
| 27.0009 | 29.6546 | 29.6735 | 33.7285 | 27.8497 | 27.8564 | 29.5668 | 35.4745 | 35.4688 | 27.7860 | 27.7812 | 41.5838 | 41.5761 |
| 30.9851 | 33.0059 | 33.3124 | 27.8497 | 34.0184 | 34.0167 | 34.0390 | 40.0466 | 40.0485 | 32.0514 | 32.0479 | 45.1647 | 45.1650 |


| 30.9806 | 33.0043 | 33.3111 | 27.8564 | 34.0167 | 34.0153 | 34.0377 | 40.0409 | 40.0428 | 32.0429 | 32.0396 | 45.1641 | 45.1641 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 38.2784 | 36.7859 | 36.9721 | 29.5668 | 34.0390 | 34.0377 | 43.2719 | 45.5748 | 45.5594 | 35.7614 | 35.7201 | 51.7981 | 51.8094 |
| 42.0289 | 43.4589 | 43.6242 | 35.4745 | 40.0466 | 40.0409 | 45.5748 | 55.9455 | 55.9385 | 42.6820 | 42.6631 | 58.7177 | 58.7049 |
| 42.0175 | 43.4451 | 43.6103 | 35.4688 | 40.0485 | 40.0428 | 45.5594 | 55.9385 | 55.9326 | 42.6826 | 42.6637 | 58.6924 | 58.6794 |
| 32.9492 | 33.9141 | 34.0128 | 27.7860 | 32.0514 | 32.0429 | 35.7614 | 42.6820 | 42.6826 | 34.4351 | 34.4187 | 45.0474 | 45.0451 |
| 32.9109 | 33.8939 | 33.9926 | 27.7812 | 32.0479 | 32.0396 | 35.7201 | 42.6631 | 42.6637 | 34.4187 | 34.4034 | 45.0127 | 45.0105 |
| 46.5067 | 49.6020 | 49.9503 | 41.5838 | 45.1647 | 45.1641 | 51.7981 | 58.7177 | 58.6924 | 45.0474 | 45.0127 | 72.8428 | 72.8319 |
| 46.5061 | 49.5980 | 49.9460 | 41.5761 | 45.1650 | 45.1641 | 51.8094 | 58.7049 | 58.6794 | 45.0451 | 45.0105 | 72.8319 | 72.8225 |

## 10-year covariance

Columns 1 through 16

| 31.2309 | 24.8478 | 24.8617 | 30.7850 | 24.0031 | 24.4882 | 24.3843 | 25.3883 | 25.3618 | 25.1428 | 23.3790 | 24.8199 | 20.2254 | 23.8075 | 24.6090 | 27.1749 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 24.8478 | 23.2353 | 23.2457 | 26.1301 | 21.3706 | 21.9906 | 21.9042 | 22.8142 | 22.7832 | 22.3608 | 19.9640 | 21.0184 | 17.2003 | 20.5254 | 21.1212 | 22.6525 |
| 24.8617 | 23.2457 | 23.2569 | 26.1479 | 21.3771 | 22.0013 | 21.9158 | 22.8248 | 22.7938 | 22.3663 | 19.9772 | 21.0308 | 17.2128 | 20.5350 | 21.1319 | 22.6727 |
| 30.7850 | 26.1301 | 26.1479 | 33.1930 | 24.9410 | 25.5111 | 25.3643 | 26.2259 | 26.1997 | 26.1403 | 23.8175 | 25.2868 | 20.6819 | 24.0430 | 24.8585 | 27.7742 |
| 24.0031 | 21.3706 | 21.3771 | 24.9410 | 22.9294 | 20.6227 | 20.5367 | 21.3769 | 21.3595 | 21.1526 | 18.7396 | 20.0021 | 16.5368 | 20.3949 | 21.0116 | 21.3178 |
| 24.4882 | 21.9906 | 22.0013 | 25.5111 | 20.6227 | 22.2428 | 22.1054 | 22.8457 | 22.8139 | 21.8098 | 19.7462 | 20.5877 | 16.7819 | 20.1222 | 20.8060 | 22.6744 |
| 24.3843 | 21.9042 | 21.9158 | 25.3643 | 20.5367 | 22.1054 | 22.0352 | 22.7275 | 22.6943 | 21.7137 | 19.7107 | 20.4938 | 16.7223 | 20.0851 | 20.7746 | 22.6107 |
| 25.3883 | 22.8142 | 22.8248 | 26.2259 | 21.3769 | 22.8457 | 22.7275 | 23.7902 | 23.7594 | 22.4862 | 20.3872 | 21.4404 | 17.5301 | 21.0107 | 21.7366 | 23.4904 |
| 25.3618 | 22.7832 | 22.7938 | 26.1997 | 21.3595 | 22.8139 | 22.6943 | 23.7594 | 23.7303 | 22.4638 | 20.3629 | 21.4213 | 17.5210 | 20.9761 | 21.7004 | 23.4706 |
| 25.1428 | 22.3608 | 22.3663 | 26.1403 | 21.1526 | 21.8098 | 21.7137 | 22.4862 | 22.4638 | 23.7489 | 19.9589 | 20.7800 | 17.1755 | 20.0395 | 20.7332 | 23.4432 |
| 23.3790 | 19.9640 | 19.9772 | 23.8175 | 18.7396 | 19.7462 | 19.7107 | 20.3872 | 20.3629 | 19.9589 | 19.0803 | 19.5372 | 16.0565 | 18.7290 | 19.4943 | 21.8360 |
| 24.8199 | 21.0184 | 21.0308 | 25.2868 | 20.0021 | 20.5877 | 20.4938 | 21.4404 | 21.4213 | 20.7800 | 19.5372 | 21.1475 | 17.2760 | 19.5903 | 20.3179 | 22.9191 |


| 20.2254 | 17.2003 | 17.2128 | 20.6819 | 16.5368 | 16.7819 | 16.7223 | 17.5301 | 17.5210 | 17.1755 | 16.0565 | 17.2760 | 14.9057 | 16.0206 | 16.7023 | 19.1710 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 23.8075 | 20.5254 | 20.5350 | 24.0430 | 20.3949 | 20.1222 | 20.0851 | 21.0107 | 20.9761 | 20.0395 | 18.7290 | 19.5903 | 16.0206 | 22.0817 | 22.6642 | 20.9874 |
| 24.6090 | 21.1212 | 21.1319 | 24.8585 | 21.0116 | 20.8060 | 20.7746 | 21.7366 | 21.7004 | 20.7332 | 19.4943 | 20.3179 | 16.7023 | 22.6642 | 23.5739 | 22.1688 |
| 27.1749 | 22.6525 | 22.6727 | 27.7742 | 21.3178 | 22.6744 | 22.6107 | 23.4904 | 23.4706 | 23.4432 | 21.8360 | 22.9191 | 19.1710 | 20.9874 | 22.1688 | 27.6401 |
| 30.1961 | 25.3124 | 25.3292 | 31.1379 | 24.2313 | 24.6671 | 24.5782 | 25.6074 | 25.5842 | 25.2982 | 23.3465 | 24.7373 | 20.2782 | 23.7602 | 24.7396 | 27.1365 |
| 27.7446 | 24.3787 | 24.3916 | 29.2914 | 23.8848 | 23.7122 | 23.6254 | 24.5438 | 24.5260 | 24.7176 | 21.9664 | 23.1417 | 19.4694 | 22.0982 | 23.1653 | 26.0448 |
| 27.8244 | 24.4614 | 24.4759 | 29.4017 | 23.9835 | 23.8218 | 23.7351 | 24.6332 | 24.6155 | 24.8370 | 22.0709 | 23.2386 | 19.5441 | 22.2107 | 23.2982 | 26.2300 |
| 21.5467 | 19.1000 | 19.1094 | 22.3399 | 18.6286 | 18.5108 | 18.5119 | 19.2533 | 19.2381 | 19.3999 | 17.7932 | 18.1328 | 15.8690 | 17.5475 | 18.5335 | 20.9003 |
| 25.8318 | 23.2603 | 23.2710 | 26.8093 | 22.2217 | 22.2982 | 22.2004 | 23.1977 | 23.1796 | 23.5008 | 20.7215 | 21.5941 | 18.3132 | 21.6542 | 22.6181 | 24.3176 |
| 25.8559 | 23.2994 | 23.3101 | 26.8331 | 22.2593 | 22.3258 | 22.2290 | 23.2278 | 23.2096 | 23.5255 | 20.7385 | 21.6071 | 18.3277 | 21.6909 | 22.6554 | 24.3306 |
| 30.3773 | 25.0798 | 25.1009 | 31.6726 | 23.7475 | 24.5000 | 24.3976 | 25.4967 | 25.4890 | 25.3830 | 23.5864 | 25.1732 | 20.8281 | 23.3852 | 24.5245 | 27.9769 |
| 30.5931 | 26.1100 | 26.1236 | 31.7336 | 24.7081 | 25.9342 | 25.8163 | 26.7742 | 26.7461 | 27.5664 | 24.3822 | 25.4613 | 21.3676 | 23.6183 | 24.9755 | 29.9130 |
| 30.8211 | 26.3571 | 26.3686 | 32.1117 | 24.8708 | 26.1073 | 25.9886 | 27.0069 | 26.9804 | 27.7454 | 24.6163 | 25.7394 | 21.5820 | 23.8727 | 25.2260 | 30.1693 |
| 26.9012 | 23.6476 | 23.6602 | 27.9810 | 22.0548 | 23.1689 | 23.0857 | 24.0741 | 24.0482 | 24.0197 | 21.5216 | 22.6417 | 18.9482 | 21.3232 | 22.2582 | 25.3181 |
| 26.8795 | 23.6347 | 23.6474 | 27.9513 | 22.0465 | 23.1566 | 23.0727 | 24.0609 | 24.0350 | 24.0021 | 21.5085 | 22.6258 | 18.9434 | 21.3171 | 22.2523 | 25.3015 |
| 33.8625 | 29.1226 | 29.1471 | 36.2767 | 27.7867 | 28.2846 | 28.1546 | 29.3795 | 29.3726 | 29.7234 | 26.7579 | 28.3644 | 24.1722 | 26.8795 | 28.4196 | 32.9216 |
| 33.6136 | 28.8814 | 28.9054 | 36.0203 | 27.6327 | 28.0878 | 27.9475 | 29.1835 | 29.1779 | 29.5323 | 26.5668 | 28.1792 | 24.0283 | 26.6779 | 28.2459 | 32.7539 |

Columns 17 through 29

| 30.1961 | 27.7446 | 27.8244 | 21.5467 | 25.8318 | 25.8559 | 30.3773 | 30.5931 | 30.8211 | 26.9012 | 26.8795 | 33.8625 | 33.6136 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 25.3124 | 24.3787 | 24.4614 | 19.1000 | 23.2603 | 23.2994 | 25.0798 | 26.1100 | 26.3571 | 23.6476 | 23.6347 | 29.1226 | 28.8814 |
| 25.3292 | 24.3916 | 24.4759 | 19.1094 | 23.2710 | 23.3101 | 25.1009 | 26.1236 | 26.3686 | 23.6602 | 23.6474 | 29.1471 | 28.9054 |
| 31.1379 | 29.2914 | 29.4017 | 22.3399 | 26.8093 | 26.8331 | 31.6726 | 31.7336 | 32.1117 | 27.9810 | 27.9513 | 36.2767 | 36.0203 |
| 24.2313 | 23.8848 | 23.9835 | 18.6286 | 22.2217 | 22.2593 | 23.7475 | 24.7081 | 24.8708 | 22.0548 | 22.0465 | 27.7867 | 27.6327 |
| 24.6671 | 23.7122 | 23.8218 | 18.5108 | 22.2982 | 22.3258 | 24.5000 | 25.9342 | 26.1073 | 23.1689 | 23.1566 | 28.2846 | 28.0878 |


| 24.5782 | 23.6254 | 23.7351 | 18.5119 | 22.2004 | 22.2290 | 24.3976 | 25.8163 | 25.9886 | 23.0857 | 23.0727 | 28.1546 | 27.9475 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 25.6074 | 24 | 24 | 19.2533 |  | 23 | 25 |  |  |  | 24.0609 | 29.3795 | 29.1835 |
| 25.5842 | 24.5 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 25.2 | 24.717 | 24.8 |  | 23 | 23 | 25 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | . | , 532 |
| 23. |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 24.7373 | 23 | 23 | 18 |  | 21 | 25 | 25 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 28 |
| . 2 | 19. | 19 |  |  |  |  |  |  | 18 | 18.9434 | 2 | 24.0283 |
| 23.7602 | 22 | 22 | 17 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 21.3232 | 21.3171 | 26.8795 | 26.6779 |
| . 7 | 23 |  | 18 |  |  | 2 |  | 25 | 22 | 22 | 28.4196 | 28.2459 |
| 2 | 2 | 26 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 29.9130 | 30.1693 | 25.3181 | 5 | 6 | 9 |
| . 581 | 28.384 | 28.46 | 21 | 26.2 | 26.306 | 30. | 30.87 | 3 | 27 | 27 | 34.8717 | 34.6488 |
| 28.3840 | 29 |  |  | 2 | 26.5951 | 28.5098 | 30.6787 | ) | 26.5095 | 26.4992 | 7 | 4 |
| 28.467 | 29.981 | 30.1 | 22. | 26.712 | 26.743 | 28 | 30.7466 | 30.86 | 26.5502 | 26.5400 | 35.3234 | 35.1177 |
| 2 | 22 |  |  |  |  |  |  | 24.1832 | 2 |  | 7 | 29.1627 |
| 26 | 26.564 | 26.712 | 21 | 28 | 28. | 26. | 28.2 | 28.44 | 24.9203 | 24.9221 | 33.0241 | 32.8022 |
| 26 | 26 | 26 | 21 | 28 | 28 | 26 | 28 | 28 | 24. | 24.9413 | 33.0675 | 32.8450 |
| 30 | 28.509 | 28.596 | 22 | 26 | 26 | 33 | 3 | 31 | 27.5990 | 27.5750 | 36.6239 | 36.4499 |
| 30.875 | 30.678 | 30.746 | 24. | 28.2 | 28.2 | 31.4 | 37.1673 | 36.9934 | 30.0 | 30.0798 | 38.0363 | 37.8495 |
| 31.3269 | 30.797 | 30.868 | 24 | 28.443 | 28 | 31. | 36 | 37 | 30.519 | 30.5010 | 38.4335 | 38.2668 |
| 27.3223 | 26.5095 | 26.5502 | 21.025 | 24.9203 | 24.9395 | 27.5990 | 30.0983 | 30.5198 | 26.8481 | 26.8344 | 32.0864 | 31.8747 |
| 27.2982 | 26.4992 | 26.540 | 21.018 | 24.9221 | 24.9413 | 27.5750 | 30.0798 | 30.5010 | 26.8344 | 26.8215 | 32.0632 | 31.8515 |
| 34.8717 | 35.1617 | 35.3234 | 29.4027 | 33.0241 | 33.0675 | 36.6239 | 38.0363 | 38.4335 | 32.0864 | 32.0632 | 48.6614 | 48.4155 |
| 34.6488 | 34.9554 | 35.1177 | 29.1627 | 32.8022 | 32.8450 | 36.4499 | 37.8495 | 38.2668 | 31.8747 | 31.8515 | 48.4155 | 48.2020 |

## Appendix B: matlab code for Chapter 3

```
Name the first matlab file: Main_RunThisFile.m
clc
clear
close all
% Lagrange function for maximizing theta and minimizing z, run this file to
display DEA scores, weight for each sample fund and lagrange multiplier;
[ERjt,CovRitRjt]=Condition();
for j0=1:29
    disp(['===========solve j0=', num2str(j0),' ==========='])
    disp('--------- maximize theta ----------')
    [W1,theta,Lambda1,Alpha1] = Lagrange1(ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
    disp('------------ minimize z ------------')
    [W2, z,Lambda2,Alpha2] = Lagrange2(ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
```

end

## Name the second matlab file: Condition.m

```
% condition function including the information of expected return and
covariance matrix
function [ERjt,CovRitRjt]=Condition()
% expected return for three year periods
ExpCov3=[...]
% expected return for five year periods
ExpCov5=[...]
% expected return for ten year periods
ExpCov10=[...]
R3=[...]
R5=[...]
R10=[...]
% covariance matrix
```

```
CovRitRjt(:,:,1) = ExpCov3;
CovRitRjt(:,:,2) = ExpCov5;
CovRitRjt(:,:,3) = ExpCov10;
ERjt(:,1) = R3;
ERjt(:,2) = R5;
ERjt(:,3) = R10;
end
```


## Name the third matlab file Lagrange1.m

```
% the first lagrange function
function [W,theta,Lambda,Alpha] = Lagrange1(ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
X0 = 0.5*ones ( 30,1);
X0(30) = 1;
lb = zeros(30,1);
% lower bound restriction
lb(30) = 1;
ub = ones (30,1);
% upper bound restriction
ub (30) = Inf;
% optimset creates an options structure that you can pass as an input
argument to the following optimization functions
options = optimset('Display','off','Algorithm','interior-
point','LargeScale','on','MaxIter', 5000,'MaxFunEvals',1e+5,'TolCon',1e-
16,'TolFun',1e-16,'TolX',1e-16);
%fmincon finds minimum of constrained nonlinear multivariable function
[X,fval,exitflag,output,lambda] = fmincon(@MyFun1,X0,[], [], [],[],lb,ub,@ (X)
MyCon1(X,ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0),options);
W = X(1:29);
theta = X(30);
Lambda = [lambda.eqnonlin;lambda.ineqnonlin(1:3)];
Alpha = lambda.ineqnonlin(4:6);
end
```


## Name the fourth matlab file Lagrange2.m

```
% the second lagrange function
function [W, z,Lambda,Alpha] = Lagrange2(ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
X0 = 0.5*ones (30,1);
X0(30) = 1;
```

```
lb = zeros(30,1);
% lower bound restriction
ub = ones (30,1);
% upper bound restriction
ub (30) = 1;
% optimset creates an options structure that you can pass as an input
argument to the following optimization functions
options = optimset('Display','off','Algorithm','interior-
point','LargeScale','on','MaxIter',5000,'MaxFunEvals',1e+5,'TolCon',1e-
16,'TolFun',1e-16,'TolX',1e-16);
    %fmincon finds minimum of constrained nonlinear multivariable function
[X,fval,exitflag,output,lambda] = fmincon(@MyFun2,X0, [], [], [], [],lb,ub,@ (X)
MyCon2(X,ERjt, CovRitRjt,j0),options);
W = X(1:29);
z = X (30);
Lambda = [lambda.eqnonlin;lambda.ineqnonlin(1:3)];
Alpha = lambda.ineqnonlin(4:6);
end
```


## Name the fifth matlab file MyCon1.m

```
% the first condition function
function [c,ceq] = MyCon1(X,ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
W = X(1:29);
theta = X(30);
% covariance matrix
CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt(:,:,1);
CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt(:,:,2);
CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt(:,:,3);
% variance of each sample fund
Sigma2jt1=diag(CovRitRjt1);
Sigma2jt2=diag(CovRitRjt2);
Sigma2jt3=diag(CovRitRjt3);
CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt1-diag(Sigma2jt1);
CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt2-diag(Sigma2jt2);
CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt3-diag(Sigma2jt3);
tmp = theta*ERjt(j0,:)-W'*ERjt;
c = [tmp'
(W.^2)'*Sigma2jt1+W'*CovRitRjt1*W-Sigma2jt1(j0)
(W.^2)'*Sigma2jt2+W'*CovRitRjt2*W-Sigma2jt2(j0)
```

```
    (W.^2)'*Sigma2jt3+W'*CovRitRjt3*W-Sigma2jt3(j0)];
ceq = sum(W)-1;
end
```


## Name the sixth matlab file MyCon2.m

```
% the second condition function
function [c,ceq] = MyCon2(X,ERjt,CovRitRjt,j0)
W = X(1:29);
% weights for each sample fund
z = X (30);
% covariance matrix
CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt(:,:,1);
CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt(:,:,2);
CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt(:,:,3);
Sigma2jt1=diag(CovRitRjt1);
Sigma2jt2=diag(CovRitRjt2);
Sigma2jt3=diag(CovRitRjt3);
CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt1-diag(Sigma2jt1);
CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt2-diag(Sigma2jt2);
CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt3-diag(Sigma2jt3);
tmp = ERjt(j0,:)-W'*ERjt;
c = [tmp '
    (W.^2)'*Sigma2jt1+W'*CovRitRjt1*W-z*Sigma2jt1(j0)
    (W.^2)'*Sigma2jt2+W'*CovRitRjt2*W-z*Sigma2jt2(j0)
    (W.^2)'*Sigma2jt3+W'*CovRitRjt3*W-z*Sigma2jt3(j0)];
ceq = sum(W)-1;
end
```


# Name the seventh matlab file Myfun1.m 

\% passing output DEA score theta to myfun1
function theta $=$ MyFun1 (X)
theta $=-X(30)$;
end

## Name the eighth matlab file Myfun2.m

```
% passing input DEA score z to myfun2
function z = MyFun2(X)
z = X (30);
end
```


## Appendix C: matlab codes for Chapter 4

Step1: form kernel density function using the original DEA scores and obtain the optimal bandwidth $h$.

## File name: kde.m

(kde.m is downloaded from Mathwork website:
http://www.mathworks.com/matlabcentral/fileexchange/14034-kernel-densityestimator)
function [bandwidth, density, xmesh, cdf]=kde(data, n, MIN, MAX)
data=[1.015
1.1505
1.0308
1.1359

1
1.8621
1.5914
1.7987
1.714

1
1.1116
1.9331

1
1.036
1.143
1.2532
1.0331
1.3196
1.3974
1.0031

1. 3265
1.2344

1
1
1.0006
1.4387
1.5747

1
1.0593];

```
% Reliable and extremely fast kernel density estimator for one-dimensional
data;
% Gaussian kernel is assumed and the bandwidth is chosen
automatically;
% Unlike many other implementations, this one is immune to problems
% caused by multimodal densities with widely separated modes (see
example). The
% estimation does not deteriorate for multimodal densities, because
we never assume
% a parametric model for the data.
% INPUTS:
% data - a vector of data from which the density estimate is
constructed;
% n - the number of mesh points used in the uniform
discretization of the
% interval [MIN, MAX]; n has to be a power of two; if n is
not a power of two, then
% n is rounded up to the next power of two, i.e., n is set to
n=2^ceil(log2(n));
% the default value of }n\mathrm{ is }n=\mp@subsup{2}{}{\wedge}12\mathrm{ ;
% MIN, MAX - defines the interval [MIN,MAX] on which the density
estimate is constructed;
% the default values of MIN and MAX are:
% MIN=min(data) -Range/10 and MAX=max(data)+Range/10, where
Range=max(data)-min(data);
% OUTPUTS:
% bandwidth - the optimal bandwidth (Gaussian kernel assumed);
% density - column vector of length 'n' with the values of the density
% estimate at the grid points;
% xmesh - the grid over which the density estimate is computed;
% - If no output is requested, then the code automatically
plots a graph of
% the density estimate.
% cdf - column vector of length 'n' with the values of the cdf
% Reference:
% Kernel density estimation via diffusion
% Z. I. Botev, J. F. Grotowski, and D. P. Kroese (2010)
% Annals of Statistics, Volume 38, Number 5, pages 2916-2957.
%
% Example:
```

```
data=[randn(100,1); randn(100,1)*2+35 ; randn(100,1)+55];
```

\% Notes: If you have a more reliable and accurate one-dimensional kernel density
\% estimation software, please email me at botev@maths.uq.edu.au

```
data=data(:); %make data a column vector
if nargin<2 % if n is not supplied switch to the default
    n=2^14;
end
n=2^ceil(log2(n)); % round up n to the next power of 2;
if nargin<4 %define the default interval [MIN,MAX]
    minimum=min(data); maximum=max(data);
    Range=maximum-minimum;
    MIN=minimum-Range/10; MAX=maximum+Range/10;
```

end

```
% set up the grid over which the density estimate is computed;
R=MAX-MIN; dx=R/(n-1); xmesh=MIN+[0:dx:R]; N=length(unique(data));
%bin the data uniformly using the grid defined above;
initial_data=histc(data,xmesh)/N;
initial_data=initial_data/sum(initial_data);
a=dctld(initial_data); % discrete cosine transform of initial data
% now compute the optimal bandwidth^2 using the referenced method
I=[1:n-1]'.^2; a2=(a(2:end)/2).^2;
% use fzero to solve the equation t=zeta*gamma^[5](t)
try
    t_star=fzero(@(t)fixed_point(t,N,I,a2),[0,.1]);
catch
    t_star=.28*N^(-2/5);
end
% smooth the discrete cosine transform of initial data using t_star
a_t=a.* exp(-[0:n-1]'.^2*pi^2*t_star/2);
% now apply the inverse discrete cosine transform
if (nargout>1)|(nargout==0)
    density=idct1d(a_t)/R;
end
```

```
% take the rescaling of the data into account
bandwidth=sqrt(t star)*R;
if nargout==0
    figure(1), plot(xmesh,density)
end
% for cdf estimation
if nargout>3
    f=2*pi^2*sum(I.*a2.*exp(-I*pi^2*t_star));
    t_cdf=(sqrt (pi)*f*N)^(-2/3);
    % now get values of cdf on grid points using IDCT and cumsum function
    a_cdf=a.*exp(-[0:n-1]'.^2*pi^2*t_cdf/2);
    cdf=cumsum(idct1d(a_cdf))*(dx/R);
    % take the rescaling into account if the bandwidth value is required
    bandwidth_cdf=sqrt(t_cdf)*R;
end
end
%################################################################
function out=fixed_point(t,N,I, a2)
% this implements the function t-zeta*gamma^[l](t)
l=7;
f=2*pi^(2*l)*sum(I.^1.*a2.*exp(-I*pi^2*t));
for s=1-1:-1:2
K0=prod([1:2:2*s-1])/sqrt(2*pi); const=(1+(1/2)^(s+1/2))/3;
time=(2* const*K0/N/f)^ (2/ (3+2*s));
f=2*pi^(2*s)*sum(I.^s.*a2.*exp(-I*pi^2*time));
end
out=t-(2*N*sqre(pi)*f)^ (-2/5);
end
%##############################################################
function out = idctld(data)
% computes the inverse discrete cosine transform
[nrows,ncols]=size(data);
% Compute weights
weights = nrows*exp(i*(0:nrows-1)*pi/(2*nrows)).';
% Compute x tilde using equation (5.93) in Jain
data = real(ifft(weights.*data));
```

```
% Re-order elements of each column according to equations (5.93) and
% (5.94) in Jain
out = zeros(nrows,1);
out(1:2:nrows) = data(1:nrows/2);
out(2:2:nrows) = data(nrows:-1:nrows/2+1);
% Reference:
% A. K. Jain, "Fundamentals of Digital Image
% Processing", pp. 150-153.
end
%##############################################################
function data=dct1d(data)
% computes the discrete cosine transform of the column vector data
[nrows,ncols]= size(data);
% Compute weights to multiply DFT coefficients
weight = [1;2*(exp(-i*(1:nrows-1)*pi/(2*nrows))).'];
% Re-order the elements of the columns of x
data = [ data(1:2:end,:); data(end:-2:2,:) ];
% Multiply FFT by weights:
data= real(weight.* fft(data));
end
```

Step 2: creating replicates from original DEA scores and produce ${ }_{k=\frac{\hat{\theta}_{i}}{\theta_{i b}} i=1, \ldots 29, b=1, \ldots 2000}$

```
PD=fitdist(x,'kernel','support',[min(x) -Range/10000,max(x)+Range/10000],
'width',0.2186)
% Fit probability distribution object to data
New_X = random(PD, 2000, 29)
for i=1:29
for j=1:2000
k(j,i)=x(i,1)/New_X(j,i)
end
end
```

Step 3: obtain the new DEA scores from the following programming
Name the first file: Main_RunThisFile.m
for $\mathrm{j}=1: 29$
for $\mathrm{i}=1: 2000$
$X 0=0.5^{*}$ ones $(30,1) ;$
$X 0(30)=1$;
\% lower bound restrictions
$\mathrm{lb}=$ zeros $(30,1)$;
$\mathrm{lb}(30)=1$;
\% upper bound restrictions
$u b=$ ones $(30,1)$;
$u b(30)=\operatorname{Inf} ;$
\% create or edit optimization options structure
options = optimset('Display','off','Algorithm','interior-
point','LargeScale','on','MaxIter',5000,'MaxFunEvals',1e+5,'ToICon',1e-16,'ToIFun',1e-16,'TolX',1e-16);
$\operatorname{Exp} \operatorname{Cov} 3=[\ldots]_{29 \times 29}$
$\operatorname{ExpCov} 5=[\ldots]_{29 \times 29}$
$\operatorname{Exp} \operatorname{Cov} 10=[\ldots]_{29 \times 29}$
$R 3=[\ldots]_{29 \times 1}$
$R 5=[\ldots]_{29 \times 1}$
$R 10=[\ldots]_{29 \times 1}$
\% covariance matrix
$\operatorname{CovRitRjt}(:,:, 1)=\operatorname{ExpCov} 3 ;$
$\operatorname{CovRitRjt}(:,:, 2)=\operatorname{ExpCov} 5 ;$
CovRitRjt(:,:,3) = ExpCov10;
$k=[\ldots]_{2000 \times 29}$
\% creating bootstrap resamples
z3=[k(i,1)*R3(1,:)
k(i,2)*R3(2,:)
k(i,3)*R3(3,:)
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 4)^{*} \mathrm{R} 3(4,:)$
$k(i, 5) * R 3(5,:)$
$k(i, 6) * R 3(6,:)$
$k(i, 7) * R 3(7,:)$
$k(i, 8) * R 3(8,:)$
k(i,9)*R3(9,:)
$k(i, 10) * R 3(10,:)$
$k(i, 11) * R 3(11,:)$
$k(i, 12) * R 3(12,:)$
$k(i, 13) * R 3(13,:)$
$k(i, 14) * R 3(14,:)$
$k(i, 15) * R 3(15,:)$
$k(i, 16) * R 3(16,:)$
$k(i, 17) * R 3(17,:)$
$k(i, 18) * R 3(18,:)$
k(i, 19)*R3(19,:)
$k(i, 20) * R 3(20,:)$
$k(i, 21) * R 3(21,:)$
k(i,22)*R3(22,:)
$k(i, 23) * R 3(23,:)$
$k(i, 24) * R 3(24,:)$
k(i,25)*R3(25,:)
k(i,26)*R3(26,:)
k(i,27)*R3(27,:)
$k(i, 28) * R 3(28,:)$
$k(i, 29) * R 3(29,:)] ;$
$z 5=[k(i, 1) * R 5(1,:)$
$k(i, 2)^{*} R 5(2,:)$
$k(i, 3){ }^{*} R 5(3,:)$
$k(i, 4) * R 5(4,:)$
$k(i, 5) * R 5(5,:)$
$k(i, 6) * R 5(6,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 7)^{*} \mathrm{R} 5(7,:)$
$k(i, 8) * R 5(8,:)$
$k(i, 9) * R 5(9,:)$
$k(i, 10) * R 5(10,:)$
$k(i, 11) * R 5(11,:)$
$k(i, 12) * R 5(12,:)$
$k(i, 13) * R 5(13,:)$
$k(i, 14) * R 5(14,:)$
$k(i, 15) * R 5(15,:)$
$k(i, 16) * R 5(16,:)$
$k(i, 17) * R 5(17,:)$
$k(i, 18) * R 5(18,:)$
k(i, 19)*R5(19,:)
$k(i, 20) * R 5(20,:)$
k(i,21)*R5(21,:)
$k(i, 22) * R 5(22,:)$
k(i,23)*R5(23,:)
$k(i, 24) * R 5(24,:)$
$k(i, 25) * R 5(25,:)$
$k(i, 26){ }^{*} R 5(26,:)$
$k(i, 27){ }^{*} R 5(27,:)$
$k(i, 28){ }^{*} R 5(28,:)$
$\left.k(i, 29)^{*} R 5(29,:)\right] ;$
$z 10=[k(i, 1) * R 10(1,:)$
$k(i, 2)^{*} R 10(2,:)$
$k(i, 3)^{*} R 10(3,:)$
$k(i, 4)^{*} R 10(4,:)$
$k(i, 5)^{*} R 10(5,:)$
$k(i, 6)^{*} R 10(6,:)$
$k(i, 7)^{*} R 10(7,:)$
$k(i, 8)^{*} R 10(8,:)$
$k(i, 9) * R 10(9,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 10)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(10,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 11)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(11,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 12)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(12,:)$
$k(i, 13)^{*} R 10(13,:)$
$k(i, 14)^{*} R 10(14,:)$
$k(i, 15)^{*} R 10(15,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 16)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(16,:)$
k(i,17)*R10(17,:)
$k(i, 18)^{*} R 10(18,:)$
$k(i, 19)^{*} R 10(19,:)$
$k(i, 20)^{*} R 10(20,:)$
k(i,21)*R10(21,:)
k(i,22)*R10(22,:)
$k(i, 23)^{*} R 10(23,:)$
$k(i, 24)^{*} R 10(24,:)$
$k(i, 25)^{*} R 10(25,:)$
k(i,26)*R10(26,:)
$k(i, 27)^{\star}$ R10(27,:)
$k(i, 28) * R 10(28,:)$
k(i,29)*R10(29,:)];
$\operatorname{ERjt}(:, 1)=z 3 ;$
ERjt(:,2) = z5;
$\operatorname{ERjt}(:, 3)=z 10$;
$\operatorname{ERjt0}(:, 1)=R 3 ;$
$\operatorname{ERjtO}(:, 2)=R 5 ;$
ERjt0(:,3) = R10;
$[\mathrm{X}, \mathrm{fval}]=\mathrm{fmincon}(@ M y F u n 1, \mathrm{X} 0,[],[],[],[], \mathrm{Ib}, \mathrm{ub}, @(X)$ MyCon1(X,ERjt,ERjt0,CovRitRjt,j,i),options)
\% find minimum of constrained nonlinear multivariable function
eff(i,j)=-fval
end
end

## Name the second file: Myfun1.m

function theta $=$ MyFun1 $(X)$
\% passing theta to myfun1
theta $=-X(30)$;
end

Name the third file: Mycon1.m
function [c,ceq] = MyCon1 (X,ERjt,ERjt0,CovRitRjt,j,i)
$\operatorname{Exp} \operatorname{Cov} 3=[\ldots]_{29 \times 29}$

```
ExpCov5 = [...] [29\times29
ExpCov10=[...] [29\times29
R3=[...] [29\times1
R5=[...] [29\times1
R10=[...] [29\times1
% covariance matrix
CovRitRjt(.,:,1) = ExpCov3;
CovRitRjt(:,;2) = ExpCov5;
CovRitRjt(:,:,3) = ExpCov10;
k=[...] [000<29
% creating bootstrap resamples
z3=[k(i,1)*R3(1,:)
k(i,2)*R3(2,:)
k(i,3)*R3(3,:)
k(i,4)*R3(4,:)
k(i,5)*R3(5,:)
k(i,6)*R3(6,:)
k(i,7)*R3(7,:)
k(i,8)*R3(8,:)
k(i,9)*R3(9,:)
k(i,10)*R3(10,:)
k(i,11)*R3(11,:)
k(i,12)*R3(12,:)
k(i,13)*R3(13,:)
k(i,14)*R3(14,:)
k(i,15)*R3(15,:)
k(i,16)*R3(16,:)
```

$k(i, 17)^{\star} R 3(17,:)$
$k(i, 18)^{*}$ R3(18,:)
$k(i, 19)^{*}$ R3(19,:)
$k(i, 20) * R 3(20,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 21)^{*} \mathrm{R} 3(21,:)$
$k(i, 22)^{*} R 3(22,:)$
$k(i, 23) * R 3(23,:)$
$k(i, 24)^{*} R 3(24,:)$
$k(i, 25) * R 3(25,:)$
$k(i, 26)^{*}$ R3(26,:)
$k(i, 27)^{*}$ R3(27,:)
$k(i, 28)^{*} R 3(28,:)$
k(i,29)*R3(29,:)];
$z 5=[k(i, 1) * R 5(1,:)$
$k(i, 2)^{*} R 5(2,:)$
$k(i, 3) * R 5(3,:)$
$k(i, 4)^{*} R 5(4,:)$
$k(i, 5) * R 5(5,:)$
$k(i, 6)^{*} R 5(6,:)$
$k(i, 7)^{*} R 5(7,:)$
$k(i, 8) * R 5(8,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 9)^{*} \mathrm{R} 5(9,:)$
$k(i, 10) * R 5(10,:)$
$k(i, 11) * R 5(11,:)$
$k(i, 12)^{*} R 5(12,:)$
$k(i, 13)^{*} R 5(13,:)$
$k(i, 14)^{*} R 5(14, \cdot)$
$k(i, 15)^{*} R 5(15,:)$
$k(i, 16)^{*} R 5(16,:)$
$k(i, 17)^{*} R 5(17,:)$
$k(i, 18)^{*} R 5(18,:)$
$k(i, 19)^{*} R 5(19,:)$
$k(i, 20) * R 5(20,:)$
$k(i, 21)^{*} R 5(21,:)$
$k(i, 22)^{*} R 5(22,:)$
$k(i, 23) * R 5(23,:)$
$k(i, 24)^{*} R 5(24,:)$
$k(i, 25)^{*} R 5(25,:)$
$k(i, 26)^{*} R 5(26,:)$
$k(i, 27)^{*} R 5(27,:)$
$k(i, 28) * R 5(28,:)$
k(i,29)*R5(29,:)];
$z 10=\left[k(i, 1)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(1,:)\right.$
$k(i, 2)^{*} R 10(2,:)$
$k(i, 3)^{*} R 10(3,:)$
k(i,4)*R10(4,:)
k(i,5)*R10(5,:)
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 6)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(6,:)$
$k(i, 7)^{*} R 10(7,:)$
$k(i, 8)^{*} R 10(8,:)$
$k(i, 9)^{*} R 10(9,:)$
$k(i, 10)^{*} R 10(10,:)$
k(i,11)*R10(11,:)
k(i,12)*R10(12,:)
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 13)^{*} \mathrm{R} 10(13,:)$
$k(i, 14) * R 10(14,:)$
$k(i, 15) * R 10(15,:)$
$k(i, 16) * R 10(16,:)$
$k(i, 17) * R 10(17,:)$
$k(i, 18) * R 10(18,:)$
$k(i, 19) * R 10(19,:)$
$k(i, 20) * R 10(20,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 21)^{\star} \mathrm{R} 10(21,:)$
$\mathrm{k}(\mathrm{i}, 22)^{\star} \mathrm{R} 10(22,:)$
$k(i, 23) * R 10(23,:)$
$k(i, 24) * R 10(24,:)$
$k(i, 25) * R 10(25,:)$
$k(i, 26) * R 10(26,:)$
$k(i, 27) * R 10(27,:)$
$k(i, 28) * R 10(28,:)$
k(i,29)*R10(29,:)];
\% expected returns for each fund
$\operatorname{ERjt}(:, 1)=z 3 ;$
ERjt(:,2) = z5;
$\operatorname{ERjt}(:, 3)=z 10$;
$\operatorname{Erjt0}(:, 1)=R 3 ;$
$\operatorname{Erjt0}(:, 2)=R 5 ;$
$\operatorname{Erjt0}(:, 3)=\mathrm{R} 10 ;$
$W=X(1: 29) ;$
\% weights for each sample fund
theta $=X(30)$;

CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt(:,:,1);

CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt(:,:,2);

CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt(:,,:3);
Sigma2jt1 = diag(CovRitRjt1);
Sigma2jt2=diag(CovRitRjt2);
Sigma2jt3=diag(CovRitRjt3);
CovRitRjt1 = CovRitRjt1-diag(Sigma2jt1);
CovRitRjt2 = CovRitRjt2-diag(Sigma2jt2);
CovRitRjt3 = CovRitRjt3-diag(Sigma2jt3);
tmp $=$ theta*ERjt0(j,:)-W'*ERjt;
$\mathrm{c}=\left[\mathrm{tm} \mathrm{p}^{\prime}\right.$
(W.^2)'*Sigma2jt1+W'*CovRitRjt1*W-Sigma2jt1(j)
(W.^2)**Sigma2jt2+W'*CovRitRjt2*W-Sigma2jt2(j)
(W.^2)'*Sigma2jt3+W'*CovRitRjt3*W-Sigma2jt3(j)];
ceq $=\operatorname{sum}(W)-1$;
end

## Appendix D: Stata code for Chapter 5

```
regress DEA Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM, vce(robust)
% regress DEA score on Shapre Alpha NER PE MV BTM
tobit DEA Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM, Il(0) ul(1)
% regress DEA score on Shapre Alpha NER PE MV BTM in tobit model with lower
bound equal to zero and upper bound equal to one
margins, dydx(Sharpe)
% margin parameter of Sharpe ratio
margins, dydx(Alpha)
% margin parameter of alpha
margins, dydx(NER)
% margin parameter of NER
margins, dydx(PE)
% margin parameter of PE ratio
margins, dydx(MV)
% margin parameter of MV
margins, dydx(BTM)
% margin parameter of BTM
```

tobit DEA Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM, ul(1)

```
% regress DEA score on Shapre Alpha NER PE MV BTM in tobit model with upper
```

bound equal to one
margins, dydx(Sharpe)
\% margin parameter of Sharpe ratio
margins, dydx(Alpha)
\% margin parameter of alpha
margins, $d y d x(N E R)$
\% margin parameter of NER
margins, dydx(PE)
\% margin parameter of PE ratio
margins, $d y d x(M V)$
\% margin parameter of MV
margins, $\operatorname{dydx}(\mathrm{BTM})$
\% margin parameter of BTM
tobit 1/DEA Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM, II(0)
\% regress DEA score on Shapre Alpha NER PE MV BTM in tobit model with lower bound equal to zero
margins, dydx(Sharpe)
\% margin parameter of Sharpe ratio
margins, dydx(Alpha)

```
% margin parameter of alpha
```

margins, dydx(NER)
\% margin parameter of NER
margins, $\operatorname{dydx}(\mathrm{PE})$
\% margin parameter of PE ratio
margins, dydx(MV)
\% margin parameter of MV
margins, $\operatorname{dydx}(\mathrm{BTM})$
\% margin parameter of BTM
glm DEA Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM, family(binomial 1) link(logit)
\% regress DEA score on Shapre Alpha NER PE MV BTM in tobit model with logit function as link function
margins, dydx(Sharpe)
\% margin parameter of Sharpe ratio
margins, dydx(Alpha)
\% margin parameter of alpha
margins, dydx(NER)
\% margin parameter of NER
margins, $d y d x(P E)$
\% margin parameter of PE ratio
margins, $d y d x(M V)$
\% margin parameter of MV
margins, dydx(BTM)
\% margin parameter of BTM
pwcorr Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM
\% Correlations (covariances) of Sharpe Alpha NER PE MV BTM
pwcorr RankingDEA RankingSharpe RankingAlpha, sig
\% Correlations of ranking from DEA, Sharpe Alpha
regress DEA NER PE MV BTM, vce(robust)
\% regress DEA score on DEA NER PE MV BTM with robust errors predict NEWDEA, xb
\% predict new DEA scores
graph twoway (line DEA NEWDEA numberfund)
\% draw graph of DEA scores
regress Sharpe NER PE MV BTM, vce(robust)
\% regress Sharpe ratio on NER PE MV BTM with robust errors
predict NEWSharpe, xb
\% predict new sharpe ratios
graph twoway (line Sharpe NEWSharpe numberfund)
\% draw line graph of new Sharpe ratios
regress Alpha NER PE MV BTM, vce(robust)
\% regress alpha on NER PE MV BTM with robust errors
predict NEWAlpha, xb
\% predict new alphas
graph twoway (line Alpha NEWAlpha numberfund)

```
% draw line graph of new alphas
```

